

This book was written by Jim Ash, the author, is a Canadian descendant a Barnado boy aged 10 sent to Canada to work for a farmer. His research into his family revealed that part of his family descended from Prudence Ash who lived in our Village in the 1740s. There is mention of a number of other families resident in or around the village at that time and through to the early 20th century.

Jim met Eric Palmer whilst visiting the Village some years ago and was put in touch with me to see if the archives may have information that would assist him. Happily there was some helpful material and having completed his book he has kindly agreed that it be placed on the Village web site for the benefit of others interested in the history of the Village.

We are grateful to Jim for allowing us to publish his book on the web site and would remind readers that the copyright of all of the work belongs to Jim.

Richard Jackson

Archivist and Treasurer

The Willoughby Society

22nd February 2018

My Family in History

The Redmonds of St Margaret's Bay and the
Ashes of Willoughby, Warwickshire

Jim Ash
Aug 2016

Dedicated To Mom and Dad

Self-published by Jim Ash 2016

11200 7th Ave, Richmond BC Canada V7E3B9

Request copies from:

jimashemail@telus.net

Other Book "A Fortunate Life" - An Autobiography

Cover Design by Keziah Selles

Cover Photo "Sheep in Willoughby"

Printed by Minuteman Press, Richmond BC

Copyright © 2016 by Jim Ash

ISBN: 978-0-9952310-1-6

The Ash family spent one hundred fifty years farming in Willoughby, Warwickshire in England, while the Redmond family fished and farmed in St Margaret's Bay, just south of Halifax in Nova Scotia, Canada. My wife Fran's family came from France to Quebec in the 17th century, and both our families had pioneers who experienced the Scottish Clearances. This book is about the history that they and their ancestors lived - from the prominent Redmond and Devereux families in County Wexford, Ireland, to the pioneers who lived in early Canadian history. We will learn about their involvement in the French-English wars of early Nova Scotia and Quebec; on both sides of the American Revolution, and the heartbreak of drownings, tuberculosis and the Halifax Explosion. We will tell the stories of the famous, infamous and modest - of mayors and founders, murderers and thieves, candy-makers and shoe-makers. Our family stories tell of the struggle to survive World War II and escape to Canada; what it was like to come from England as a Barnardo boy at age 10 to work for a Canadian farmer (my father Reg), or to cross the country on a train to raise a family in the excitement of early Alberta (my mother's family).

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<i>Preface</i>	1
<i>James Reginald Ash (Reg) - My Father</i>	3
<i>My Mother Elizabeth May Redmond's Family</i>	19
<i>The Famous Redmonds and Devereux</i>	36
<i>The Norman Landing at Baginbun 1170</i>	37
<i>The Redmond of the Hall</i>	39
<i>The Devereux family at Ballymagir</i>	43
<i>The Modern Redmonds and Devereux in Ireland</i>	47
<i>Our Pioneers and their place in History</i>	52
<i>Louis Houde and Nicolas Gamache - Fran's French pioneers</i>	52
<i>Louis Houde Descendants - Famous and Infamous</i>	62
Camillien Houde	63
Louis David Riel	63
Marie Anne Houde - the Murderer	65
<i>David Redmond and Mary Devereaux in Halifax NS</i>	66
Fishing and Newfoundland	68
The founding of Halifax and Lunenburg	72
The Umlah and Redmond families and the Army.....	79
<i>Scotland's Clearances and our Cape Breton pioneers</i>	84
William Bishop from Falkirk.....	84
Archibald MacKinnon from Barra	86
The McKay/MacDonald families from the Outer Hebrides	88

<i>Fran's Family Moves West</i>	90
<i>Marlu's German family immigration after World War II</i>	93
<i>Ash Family History</i>.....	98
<i>Willoughby History</i>	100
<i>James Brumage (Bromwich) - Executed Robber</i>	102
<i>My Great Great Grandparents first marriages</i>	110
The Watson Family	110
The Boatmen Howkins	112
The Marlow family.....	113
<i>The Shoemakers - Ash-Warrens of Long Buckby</i>	114
Long Buckby History	115
The Northamptonshire Shoe-making Industry.	117
The Mary Warren (Ash) descendants	119
<i>The Ash Great Great Grandparents</i>	126
<i>My GGrandparents Jim and Jane - Life in Willoughby</i>	128
<i>The Dodd Family - Great Aunt Dinah Dodd</i>	133
Arthur Dodd's children and grandchildren	138
Charles Dodd children and grandchildren.	139
The Ancestry of Thomas Dodd Sr.	140
<i>The Olorenshaws and my Grandfather's First Family</i>	142
<i>my Grand Uncle and Grand Aunt Maria Tomkins family</i>	150
<i>My Grandparents brief time together</i>	154
<i>My Grandmother Catherine Farrell's Irish Catholic Family</i>	157
<i>The Brown family - 2nd marriage of my grandmother</i>	166
<i>My Uncle "Bertie" Ash and his family - my cousins</i>	168

<i>The Redmond Family in Canada.....</i>	<i>172</i>
<i>St Margaret's Bay - three generations of Redmonds</i>	<i>172</i>
<i>The Redmond/Umlah families of Thomas and Margaret</i>	<i>176</i>
<i>The Umlah family - fifth cousins</i>	<i>180</i>
<i>The Boutilier Family - fourth cousin descendants</i>	<i>188</i>
<i>My Great Great Grandparents family.....</i>	<i>190</i>
<i>The Pace Family History and Redmond third cousins.....</i>	<i>201</i>
<i>David Redmond/Edith Pace family and descendants</i>	<i>221</i>
<i>The Catholic branch in Shad Bay (4th cousins).....</i>	<i>226</i>
Thomas Redmond's descendants	227
David Redmond descendants	231
The Collier family	237
David's younger children in Halifax and the US	241
The Coolen Family of Mary Redmond (fourth cousins)	245
The Halifax Explosion - 6 Dec 1917	257
<i>The Bishop Family and third cousins</i>	<i>259</i>
<i>My Maternal Grandparents and Cape Breton cousins.....</i>	<i>276</i>
The McDonald family	277
The McKay Family	282
My grandmother Katy McKay's family in Cape Breton.....	285
<i>Epilogue - the Joys of Genealogy.....</i>	<i>291</i>

PREFACE

It has been a lot of fun tracing the history of my family back through my mother's Redmond family from the St Margaret's Bay area of Nova Scotia, just south of Halifax; and my father's Ash family from Willoughby in the Midlands of England. I have always been interested in history and geography, and these can be so much more interesting when you can relate them to your own family.

Although I have found the vital statistics of the Ash and Redmond families back four generations and more, it is the places they lived and stories of what they did and what history happened around them that have fascinated me. So this book will leave the pictures, genealogical documents and vital statistics for my web-site <http://tim-ash.com/genealogy>, or possibly for a future picture book.

I will begin with the only ancestors I know - my parents and their families, and then will jump backwards to the pioneers who first came to Canada, then follow the various branches that led down through the generations to my parents and my wives' families. We will trace the Redmonds and their wives (McKay, McDonalds of Cape Breton, Bishops of Halifax, Boutilliers and Umlahs of St Margaret's Bay) and the Ash family and their wives (Watsons, Bromwiches, Marlows, Olorenshaws and Farrells) of the area around Willoughby in the English Midlands).

The Redmond pioneer David Redman married Mary Devereux in 1766, recorded in the Anglican church St. Paul's in Halifax, Nova Scotia (Catholic churches were forbidden at the time). The Redmond and Devereux families have a very long history, dating back to the 1100s and French ancestors related distantly to William the Conqueror and his generals. The families have a rich and distinguished history in County Wexford, and It seems likely that David and Mary joined the many marriages between these famous families - though obviously they are only the poor cousins. Without any proof, it is still likely enough that I have enjoyed researching these two families in Ireland. The David Redmond descendants lived around St. Margaret's Bay fishing or farming until my

grandfather married in Sydney, and then moved to Alberta in seek of a climate better for his lung problems.

On the Ash side, my father was the pioneer who came to Canada, and I have been able to trace his ancestors back four generations to Prudence ASH, who had a probably illegitimate son - the first of three James Ash sons born in the charming town of Willoughby in the Midlands. The Ash men were all farm labourers - probably shepherds- working on the Manor house grounds, until my grandfather moved to London with his first family and enjoyed a career in the post office, becoming a Customs evaluation officer. When his first wife Ann passed away, he moved back to Rugby, and had two sons with my grandmother Catherine Farrell before passing away. My father came to Canada as a Barnardo boy, and subsequently also ended up in Edmonton, eventually finding my mother - resulting in my name after my two grandfathers - James Ash and Howard Redmond.

My ancestors are all from the United Kingdom. I identify most strongly with my father's English background, but I have Irish ancestry from the Redmonds, and from my father's mother, and Scottish ancestry from the many Scottish women to which my Redmonds were partial. I have been unable to find where my Scottish and Irish ancestors came from, as they were all in Canada before the Scottish clearances and the Irish famine - before most records. My family was mainly farm laborers on my father's side and fishermen on my mother's side, but I have found tales of murderers, mayors and brothers on both sides in the American Revolution.

My wife Fran is as Canadian as they come - her French mother's side goes back ten generations to 1649 in Quebec and France, and on her Scottish father's side to the Scottish clearances from Barra in 1822, and from the McKinnon wives families, back almost four hundred years in Canada. It was more fun researching in Quebec, where parish registers are available on-line back to 1650. Her ancestor Louis Houde has over a million descendants alive today, and has the DLHMB organization for his descendants (Descendants of Louis Houde & Madeleine Boucher).

I begin with my father, whose early life first piqued my curiosity. My Dad would rarely talk about his life before marriage, and certainly not about his childhood. My mother told me that when she met him he had quite a bad stutter (probably not a good thing for a newspaper reporter), and that he had told her very little about his childhood. She knew that he had come to Canada through the services of the Barnardo's orphanage, and was one of thousands of children brought to Canada to escape their tough lives in England. She also knew that Dad's mother had passed away shortly after they met, but all Dad had said at the time was that his mother had suffered from mental illness, and he didn't go back for her funeral.

I knew he was born in Rugby, England, so when I went to Europe with my friend Jim Mackenzie, we took a slow milk train in order to stop briefly in Rugby. We found the birth registration office a few blocks from the rail station, and I saw his birth registration in a huge four foot wide book where his birth was recorded in beautiful hand-writing. This was so much more dramatic than the business-like but battered birth certificate he carried to Vancouver.

When my father came to visit me in Toronto, and then to enjoy Expo 67 in Montreal, I found my parents accommodation in an old house a few blocks from my residence. Dad really enjoyed his stay there, as he had been covering the wars against fascism and communism for decades, and it turned out that the resident was a Communist, and had a large library of books on the history of communism and fascism, and so Dad found some very interesting reading.

One day I offered to drive my father a few dozen miles north of Toronto to visit the farm where he had lived and worked right after he first came to Canada. When we arrived in the little town of Beeton, its' one street ended at the entrance to the Cross farm - amazingly, the family that had boarded him all those years ago was still there! I was excited to go in,

hoping that Dad would at last tell me stories of his childhood, but he said "Jim, I don't think I want to go in", and that was that. I asked him if he had ever gone back to see his family in England, but all he said was "No". Somehow I knew that he just didn't want me to know what had happened to him, so to my great regret, I never asked him again.

Dad was born on December 16, 1901 at his father's home at 15 York St. in Rugby, Warwickshire in England. Fran took my picture in front of a fine brick house with a white portal on a curving street of fine brick houses on a winding street on a hill. It was part of a new subdivision built by the British Thomson-Houston corporation in anticipation of the opening in 1902 of a new factory - as housing for the more highly skilled employees they needed. Initially it made lamps (light bulbs), later electrical turbines, and it merged with Edison's company to become General Electric.

His parents were only married in July of 1901 - at census time in April they had separate residences, and Catherine was his housekeeper/tailoress. His birth was registered in early 1902, but his baptism in St. Matthew's Anglican Church in Rugby was dated Feb 11, 1901 . This led me to many incorrect theories about skulduggery to hide his illegitimacy until I checked out the birth registrations of the other five names on the baptismal page, and found all were registered in 4 Qtr 1901 or 1Qtr 1902. I guess the priest had made the same error I sometimes make with my chequebook - using the previous year for a month or two into the new year - when filling in the date at the top of the baptismal pages. So yes, Dad's parents were safely married in time for his arrival!

Less than a year later, Dad had a brother William Albert Ash. My father knew him as "Bertie", but that was a common nickname for Albert, because that was how King Edward VII (Prince Albert Edward Wettin of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha) had been nicknamed. His coronation was in summer of 1902, when Catherine was pregnant with William Albert. I was able to visit the park between Hillmorton and Clifton in Rugby which has a road lined with huge elm trees the same age as my Dad, as they were planted in the fall of 1901 in honor of the new king shortly after Queen Victoria died.

Dad's father James Ash was a retired customs officer, with a good civil service pension from the Post Office. He had three girls from his previous marriage to Ann Olorenshaw, but she had passed away in 1897. He was quite ill with diabetes, and had been treated since the death of his wife, so it is possible that he had moved back to Rugby for medical reasons, or to be closer to his brother, nieces and nephews. His children remained in the south of England near London. Katherine was his housekeeper, and possible also a caregiver - how they met is a mystery for another time.

Sadly, he contracted gangrene, and after two months, he passed away just three days after Dad's third birthday, on Dec. 19, 1904, and was buried in the Clifton Road Cemetery, which is quite impressive, with many large tombstones. I wasn't able to find him in my brief visit, but I have a picture of the large monument for his brother William, who lived until 1925. The civil service pensions back then had no provision for a survivor spousal pension, so James' death left his wife destitute with two small children. She was too distraught to fill in his death registration, which was done by her younger sister Nellie (Ellen) who had been living with Katherine before her marriage, at the census time in April 1901.

Catherine and her two children were doomed to a terrible existence in the next six years. She came from a large coal mining family in Tamworth, and she and her sisters had to make do with what little they could earn mending clothes and doing housekeeping and child care for widowers, themselves barely able to cope. Forty percent of all families in the region were in extreme poverty, and so her employment would only last as long as her employer's job. In between jobs she would return home to Tamworth and live with her sisters - they were all living in crowded homes with children, and husbands regularly out of work. To top it all off, her mother died late in 1902, and her father had probably become too old to bring in much income from the mines. It is also possible that Catherine was mentally unstable, and all of this tragedy and stress put her over the edge.

By 1910, Dad and Bertie were living with their mom in Nottingham, and her sister Nellie was in nearby Mansfield - both about forty miles from Tamworth and from Rugby. Catherine was employed as a housekeeper with Mr. Jackson, a widower with six children. On Oct 13, 1910, when Dad was only 8 years and 9 months old, he was escorted to London to

enter the Barnardo Homes, where his life was to take a turn for the better. The application form for admittance, signed by his mother, authorized Barnardo's to take Dad to Canada if the opportunity arose. The application form was filled out by a police court missionary, Mr. William Lightfoot. In those days his position was similar to a probation officer, and he was partly funded by temperance unions and religious charities who wished to keep children and parents accused of trivial or alcohol related crimes out of jail.

The explanation given was as follows :

"After her husband's death the mother, who had been a tailoress before her marriage, obtained casual tailoring work, moving about from place to place, but could not earn sufficient to maintain her two children. For some months she has been employed as housekeeper to a Mr. Jackson, her wages being one pound per month. Her employer allows her to have one child with her, but would not shelter both children permanently. He is a clerk, with a salary of one hundred pounds a year, and is a widower with six children. Her employer allows her to have one child with her, but would not shelter both children permanently (a likely excuse). James has lived with friends and has been to various schools. Latterly he lived with his aunt at Tamworth, but as the aunt has a family, and her husband, a labourer, is out of work, she was unable to maintain the boy any longer; besides which there was no proper accommodation for him at her house. Pending the application to us James stayed with his mother at Mr. Jackson's house. This arrangement could not have continued, and had we not taken the boy the mother would have had to leave her situation. The woman is a good worker.

James has a good character, is of kindly disposition, and of clean habits. The medical report certifies that he is in good health. He had not been vaccinated."

It was not uncommon for children to be removed from a parent who is unable to care for them, and in fact one of the functions of the "police court missionary" was to cope with alcoholism by removing children from unsafe family conditions. It was also considered to be a wonderful sacrifice for women to give their children the opportunity to go to Canada to start a better life, and Mrs. Ash willingly signed the Admission

Agreement with Canada Clause giving Barnardo's permission to send Reg to Canada at their discretion.

I am grateful to the After Care services of Barnardo's for the voluminous and fascinating files they sent to me, including a picture when he entered care - in some ways his interesting childhood is better documented than my own! He was transported to the Barnardo's Receiving house in Stepney Causeway, East London (sadly, this building no longer exists). The whole length of the Stepney Causeway had slowly been acquired by Barnardo's since the 1880s, and many of the buildings were used as medical and training facilities for the orphanage (See Stepney Causeway history in Barnardo's file). The next day he was admitted to Sheppard House (aka Home for Little Children, or The Children's Fold) situated at 182 Grove Road, East London (now a residential block of flats).

For much of the winter he was transferred to a Barnardo's convalescent/holiday home in Felixstowe on the east coast at 5&6 Chelsea Villas, returning to Sheppard House on Feb. 11. Probably he was in pretty bad shape and required some convalescence, and was returned to London in preparation for boarding a ship to Canada. There is no evidence that he suffered from asthma as I had - he is described as being in good health on the admission document and on all his report cards from Canada. On Feb. 20 his mother wrote to object to James' emigration and he was therefore not included in the February 1911 Party to Canada. She was still working for Mr. Jackson, and living in his home at 794 Woodborough Road, Mapperley, Nottingham. The 1911 census confirmed that she was still looking after Mr. Jackson's six children. My father was listed on the 1911 census as one of the 115 boys age 8-14 at Shepard House.

Meanwhile, his mother Catherine was moving around - probably having left her job at Mr. Jackson's. Her younger son Bertie was in poor health, and may have been judged incapable of going to Canada. It is possible that Dad came to the attention of the police court missionary as a result of Mr. Jackson's drinking or abuse. My father was quite strong willed, so it is also possible that he ran away from home, or that he was clashing with his mother or Mr. Jackson. On 6 Nov 1911 a letter was received from James' aunt, Mrs Nellie Howorth, whose address at that time was recorded as 25 Melbourne Road, West Bridgford, Nottingham, four miles from Catherine at Mr. Jackson's. Clearly Catherine was close with her

younger sister Nellie, and may have joined her in Nottingham. There is no record of Nellie's marriage, but Mr. Howorth was married and had four children, ending in 1908, so it is possible that his first wife died (in childbirth?), so it is likely that she too was living in as a housekeeper for a widower, and she took his name in writing to Barnardo's, probably on behalf of her sister Catherine.

On 27 December 1911 Catherine had a new address at 27 Hillmoor Street, Pleasley Hill, Mansfield, Nottinghamshire. This is only seven miles from the home of John Brown at 33 Derby, East Kirkby, who was to marry Catherine less than a year later on 7 Dec 1912, so she may have met him around this time. On 5 February 1912 Catherine gave Barnardo's her address as 21 Alvecote Cottage, near Tamworth - the home of her father, who may have been ill, and preparing to move in with his youngest daughter Margaret in Atherton. His address at his death in fourth quarter 1912 was in Atherton, where Margaret lived and worked as an eighteen year old barmaid. This is only a few miles from Tamworth.

Given the financial circumstances of the Farrell and Brown families, it is unlikely that they were able to visit Dad while he was in London, and I strongly suspect that he really wanted to go to Canada, and that is why he was allowed to go in Fall of 1912, against his mother's wishes. His ship the SS Sicilian left London on Sept 19, 1912 and arrived in Quebec City Sept 30, where he was transported to Toronto to meet Mr. A. B. Owen, his inspector in the Toronto office, and on to Mr. and Mrs. Hubert Cross on their farm in Beeton, Ontario where he was to live for the next seven years.

Apparently there was a mix-up regarding my father's age - there was a seven year old boy named Reginald Stanley F. Ash in the Home at the time, and his papers were sent with the September 1912 party. Mr. Owen was surprised that little Reg claimed to be ten. In his letter he said "Certainly if he is only seven, he is a remarkably well-grown and well advanced boy for his age. He has passed the 6th standard and writes a good hand". Perhaps it was an accident that Dad was sent to Canada against his mother's wishes?

Interestingly, his first letter to England, written in the fine large letter writing of a school boy, was a note to Mr. A. Fowler of Barnardo's to

confirm his safe arrival in Toronto, and requesting the addresses of two of his friends William and Richard Saunders. They weren't in Barnardo's for the 1911 census, but were boarding with a Mr. & Mrs. Sheriff of Slapton, Northamptonshire (near Daventry), probably a relative of their deceased parents from London. The answer from Barnardo's was William was c/o Mr. Henry J. Morris, and Richard was c/o Chas. A. Winegarden. So I assume they came to Canada with Dad, and the gentlemen named above would have been their contacts in the Toronto office of Barnardo's.

Mr. Herbert Cross was a young farmer just starting out on a farm next to his father William Henry Cross's and brother Wesley's farm - the family is Irish Canadian. In the 1911 census, he is shown as being 26 years old and married to Olga, age 25, but with no children. They have two servants Frederick Barrett (18) and Herbert Barry (20). Fred came over as a Barnardo boy in 1903. I thought he might be a brother to the Arthur Barrett who was in Sheppard house in the 1911 census, but he was born in Nelson, Lancashire, and in the 1901 census his older brother Fred was only one year old.

Apparently my father was in no hurry to write to his mother - she had to write Barnardo's, and it took a sharply worded letter from Mr. A Fowler in Barnardo's to my father to motivate him to write home. He sent his reply back to Mr Fowler to forward to his mother, and included a comment that Fred Barrett was hoping to return to the old country soon for a visit, along with an inventory of the farm animals on the Cross farm. To be fair, it is possible that he didn't know his mother's address, and was not aware that she had married John Brown - but it was a remarkably impersonal letter written four months after he had settled in at Beeton.

My father was no shrinking violet, and he was quite comfortable at age 12 writing quite an assertive letter to Mr. Owen and demanding his copy of the Barnardo's Canadian newsletter "Ups and Downs". It may also have shown that he was still feeling some anger, but that he was taking full advantage of all the support the orphanage offered. He continued to subscribe to Ups and Downs into his twenties, and even sent them a story he wrote when he was only twelve, which was not published.

The Cross home was inspected at least annually, and the report cards, remarkably similar from year to year, described Dad as "a tall slender good looking boy in the best of health, clothing OK"; "making good progress - is willing, active and intelligent"; "Treated in every way as a member of this family"; "attends church(Methodist) and school regularly"; "lives in large brick house, neat and clean, an up-to-date farm". He passed the high school entrance exam in June 1914 -"This boy has the unique distinction of being the only child in the district who passed the entrance exam to High School on the June exams. The boy has not been to school, since as the teacher says, she cannot put him any further ahead" - reported by Robert Bruce.

In April of 1914, the child support sent to Mrs. Cross by Barnardo's ended, and she wrote a letter asking that he be allowed to stay with them, and committing to give him free room and board in return for his labour. One year later, the Cross family was asked to sign their standard three year contract for wages of \$125 , payable at the expiration of the contract - with one quarter to go to my father, and the other three quarters to be held in trust for him by Barnardo's until he is twenty-one. Ironically, this wage is almost double what his mother was earning for doing the housework, sewing the clothing and looking after six children for Mr. Jackson! Mr. Cross's comment was that \$125 is a large sum to them, but that they will pay it rather than part with the boy.

On 21 Sep 1917, William Herbert Cross passed away at the age of seventy four, and was buried in the Tecumseth cemetery. I believe that my father loved him like a grandfather, as I had found in his effects a set of nested metal shot glasses inside a leather case embossed with the initials W.H. Perhaps old W.H. had shared my Dad's first drink with him, although to my knowledge my father never drank after his marriage. I was glad he was able to carry a memento around with him for all those years. On my first trip to Salt Lake City, I was delighted to open a book to see in front of me a family picture of W.H. Cross taken in 1898 - he is the white bearded gentleman in front, and twelve year old Herbert is behind him. Taken from the book "Tecumseth Township, the unforgettable past: a local history of Tecumseth Township, Simcoe Co, Ontario, Canada by Allan Anderson and wife Betty Tomlinson Anderson, available at the Family History Library in Salt Lake City, code 971.317 H2t. The picture is in the

chapter 3 on Farming .. Clearing the Dense Forest to Present Day
Combining, which I have copied.

Shortly after his father's death, Herbert Cross sold his farm and moved to Edmonton. When the \$125 came due in April 1919, the bill was settled by Herbert's brother Wesley. I am just guessing that Wesley inherited his father's farm, and Herbert decided to sell to his brother and seek another farm in Alberta, where there were incentives to attract new farmers. Interestingly, my father donated \$10 from his share to Barnardo's Homes, a measure of his gratitude for what they had done for him.

He did work for Wesley and other neighbourhood farmers for a year or two, but chose to move to Alberta, probably in 1921. When he was eighteen, he was employed by farmer Ellerith McKay in Bondhead, Ontario (11 miles from Beeton), and in early 1921 Mr. Cross wrote from Edmonton to say Dad was "well thought of in Bondhead". By August 1922, my father returned to Ontario on vacation, and stopped in at the Toronto Barnardo's office to ask permission to use some of his money to replace his suitcase and clothes, which he had lost on the train (sounds like me!). By that time he had been working for the Edmonton Journal for some months, and was earning a decent living.

When it was time for Dad to receive the sum held in trust, the funds weren't forthcoming, so he wrote a very business-like letter - typed - enclosing the birth certificate he had received years earlier from his mother, and requesting his money so he can repay the small sum of money he had borrowed to purchase property, probably his residence at 10012 104th Street in Edmonton (now near the downtown Holiday Inn Express). This is only seven blocks from the current Edmonton Journal building, which was first occupied in 1921. That certificate, tattered and repaired with tape, was returned to Dad, and was in his effects when he died. The \$93.00 owed to him was promptly paid out to him.

The letter is a masterpiece, one I enjoyed immensely - here is an excerpt:

"your reply to my communication of the 28th ultimo, re bank balance held in trust for me under the name of Dr. Barnardo's Homes, safely received and contents noted. Concerning your declaration that my 21st birthday does not occur until December 8, 1923, and that, consequently, I

am not entitled to bank balance previously referred to, until that time has arrived, I beg to take exception to your statement, based though it may be, upon the records of the Homes.

Am enclosing herewith certified copy of my birth registration, forwarded to me by my mother a few years ago. This, I presume, should be conclusive proof of my exact age. You will find, upon examination of this certificate, that I was born on December 16, 1901, which cannot but remind you of the fact that I have attained my majority, and that, therefore, you no longer have the legal right to hold in trust, against my will, money which belongs to me.

May I hope that you will see your way clear to forward to me at the earliest possible moment the money which is rightfully my own. With all good wishes for the success of the Homes, I beg to remain, sir,
Sincerely yours Jas. Reg. Ash"

So my father was on his way to a lifetime career in the newspaper industry. The papers received from Barnardo's tell the story of his childhood, and answer all the questions about how, where and when he came to Canada and earned a life of independence, but it doesn't completely answer the question of why. His mother was said to have been mentally ill, and at one point I was intrigued by the coincidence that a major home for the mentally ill (on "Barmy Square") was very near Barnardo's Home for Little Boys, and was also close to where his father's eldest daughter lived in East London. Perhaps his mother had been committed there with the help of her step-daughter, and Reg had been schooled at Barnardo's during her confinement. This speculation was fuelled by the coincidence that there was a staff member named John Brown - the name of her second husband.

However, I doubt very much that she could have gained employment by Mr. Jackson and cared for six children plus her own two, and later be able to attract Mr. Brown and look after his seven children if she was not of sound mind. The illness referred to by my mother was almost certainly because of her suicide, which was described as being due to her wish to escape a painful and fatal disease.

So, I expect that my father came to the attention of the police court missionary because of Catherine's employer Mr. Jackson's drinking, and a

conflict with my father resulting in his wish to expel the child. My father was quite strong-willed at age eight, and may have been trying to protect his mother from Mr. Jackson's behavior. She did remain employed by him for at least six months, and probably a year, but eventually she left him and moved to nearby Mansfield where she met, and possibly was employed by future husband John Brown - accounting for her letter to Barnardo's requesting my father not to go to Canada. From the fact that Barnardo's sent him anyway, after a delay of over a year, indicates to me that my father was enthusiastic about going to Canada, and Barnardo's had questions about his mother's ability to care for Dad.

So, our family owes a great debt to the Barnardo's Homes organization. How else could my father have gone from starving waif at age 8 to home owner in Canada at age 21? It may seem unbelievable to us now that it was such a noble sacrifice for a mother to give up her son and send him to a distant place never to see him again - but that was a symbol of the bad times in England in the early 1900s. My heart was warmed to see in one of Fran's Royalty magazines that the Queen and the Duchess of Cornwall have just opened a new building for Barnardo's in the East End of London - they are still providing services to children today, after one hundred and thirty years of service. There are now over four million Canadians descended from the children brought to Canada by Barnardo's Homes.

I know little about my father's years as a single man in Edmonton. He had a stutter when he met my mother, and also a slight congenital defect with his left hand - his middle two fingers being fused together. He was a reporter covering city hall for a number of years, and the stutter would have been a big impediment, so I think it was probably only happening in a social setting, triggered by nervousness in meeting women. He left only a few mementos of his youth - a cigar box with many song sheets and an Elks club dance card, a mysterious photograph of a finely dressed couple taken by a professional photographer (friend's marriage, perhaps?), and a medal of Rudolf Valentino's performance at the Royal Theatre.

Dad was most proud of the day in 1932 when he was working a little late, and a big story came in on the teletype machine - the kidnapped baby of famous aviator Charles Lindbergh had been found dead. He found one printer in the building, and together they put out a one page extra edition. It was the biggest scoop of the century at the Journal, and my

Dad remembers watching hundreds of people buying the paper, sitting down on the curb and weeping.

In the 1930s, Dad owned a car, and came to Vancouver for a vacation. He recalls navigating on the one lane dirt road winding around deep canyons on the southern route - now Highway 3. The road from Banff to Windermere that connected Alberta to southern BC was completed in 1923 - perhaps my father covered the story for his newspaper. There were small pull-outs about twenty miles apart, and at one point Dad met a truck coming the other way, and was forced to back up over ten miles. In any case, he must have been impressed by Vancouver, as he chose it for his honeymoon in 1938.

My mother visited a fortune teller the year before, who told her she was soon going to meet the man she would marry, and that he had something wrong with his left hand. One day she was invited to play bridge by a friend, and when she sat down across from her partner, she gasped, as she saw that his fingers were fused on his left hand. It was Dad, and they met playing games - a passion for my mother. Mom has kept a picture of Dad sprawled out over the front of his fine car, smoking a pipe.

What few pictures existed of Dad's vacations were all in wilderness areas, with lots of evergreen trees, rivers and rock. My mother took his picture half way up a rock-face, so they had also taken vacations into the wilderness. They have a nice wedding picture, but never talked much about their wedding, and I can't recall them ever celebrating a wedding anniversary. They honeymooned in Vancouver, a place my father had visited previously on his own, and perhaps that is why they chose Vancouver when the Edmonton weather was seen to be bad for my asthma.

Dad came out on his own with me in summer of 1946, so he was not afraid of looking after me - but of course baby Terry stayed in Edmonton with Mom as she said goodbye to her family on the farm in Vermilion. It was quite a sacrifice, as they had built a home for me in Edmonton, and had done some major renovations - the address was 11130 61 St. As I did decades later, they had also looked at houses 25% more expensive in West Point Grey with a view over Vancouver, but settled for a more modest abode at 3577 West 31st Ave. He had no trouble getting a job at the Vancouver Province.

Like most men of that generation, Dad wasn't the kind to get down on his hands and knees to play with his kids, but he was always there for us, always participating in the picnics on the beach or in Stanley's Park, and encouraging the activities my mother found for us. He was an approving presence in my childhood, always encouraging, and cared for my mother. Perhaps it was no coincidence that they were married shortly after the death of his mother in Nottingham by suicide, brought on by a terminal illness - he was determined to look after his family to make up for my grandfather's early death and his mother's misery.

Dad was always a bit of a loner socially - in contrast with the social graces he brought to his job. I can only remember once that he and Mom had a friend who visited them in our home. We were a family quite isolated except for the relationships my mother had with other mothers on our street. Dad had only one friend in Vancouver from his single days - a Charlie Tench, but my mother was quite upset at him for borrowing money from Dad and never repaying it. We never met any of his friends.

There were a few hobbies - Dad took up tennis when I showed an interest, and he was still playing into his sixties on the Stanley Park courts. He was very healthy - it was his brother who got the asthma and was too sickly to come to Canada. I can't recall Dad ever missing a day from work, or getting a cold. He didn't do much cooking or cleaning around the house, and left most of the day to day child rearing to my mother. He loved his work, and took me to work several times to watch him going through mounds of teletypes around a huge desk with a dozen other editors. At one point he was promoted to telegraph editor, and that was around the time that we acquired a family car in 1954.

After Terry and I left home, Dad and Mom played pitch and putt golf at Queen Elizabeth Park, and like me, Dad enjoyed walking and would often walk the mile from their home on 1152 W. 52nd to get some groceries at Woodward's in Oakridge. He bought an enormous car - a Pontiac Parisienne - I think he just enjoyed the silence it afforded him. He always took Mom up to Penticton, and enjoyed swimming in the lake - usually on his back. He obviously learned swimming as an adult, as he had learned tennis, and was never much of an athlete, but he enjoyed time to himself, as do I.

The only social thing I remember him doing with my mother was when they took up square dancing when I was about eleven. It was the first time they would leave us on our own. They took lessons for a year or so, and then I remember them going to Stanley Park in the summer to take part in the square dances there.

When the Province went to being a morning paper, it affected my father's life a good deal more than mine - I was annoyed to have to get up at 6AM to deliver the paper, but Dad's shift moved to working over-night. I remember him being tired all the time, and he would be still sleeping when we came home from school - Mom was always having to shush us. He had an unusual days off system, with Sunday off, but the other day off rotating through the days of the week. However, this meant every six weeks he would get Friday and Monday off, and it was on these weekends that we would enjoy our best times as a family, often playing board games, or going on a picnic.

Dad worked past the normal retirement age - until he was 67. In the last few years he would take a second Penticton vacation each September, where he could enjoy peace and quiet and time to himself. I can just see him heading out in his huge quiet car for a week of recovery. Southam was very good to him, assigning him to cover the CP Air inaugural 747 flight to Hawaii, where he stayed in the Pink Palace (Royal Hawaiian Hotel) and every year thereafter, he and my mother would vacation in Hawaii. He knew how much my mother loved lying in the sun, and so for years he took her to the seaside, even though he burnt easily and had to keep himself covered up.

When it came time to retire, Southam put on a huge retirement party, and left us a beautiful photograph of him smiling as he was honored by his peers. At one point his boss took the microphone, and noted that there was a very unusual sight - a cigar with an Ash at both ends! Dad had given up smoking when my asthma surfaced, and I never saw him smoking at home, but I guess he still enjoyed a good cigar. He was a pipe smoker when my mother first met him.

I was glad that I was able to enjoy a vacation in New York and Washington with my parents in 1964 - including the incident sharing New York streets with the Beatles, and again in 1967 when my parents attended Expo 67, and Dad so enjoyed his stay in the home of the

Communist. He didn't read much for pleasure, but often would read books on a topic that had piqued his curiosity covering stories. He had read all of Hitler's writings and books on the history of the Nazis, so after covering the cold war for years, he was very interested in books on Communism, and this guy had a pretty good collection.

His first illnesses started the year Marlu and I were married - he was unable to come to our wedding that summer, had quite a lengthy illness that winter, and was never able to fly to Ottawa to meet his grandchildren. His first heart attack came when he was swimming in Lake Skaha when he was sixty nine (1971). It was quite a severe attack, and he was in the hospital for months before it was safe for them to return to Vancouver. Dad was never the same after that, and spent almost all of his time at home. He was supposed to exercise daily, but Mom had a terrible time getting him to walk around the block with her. Terry was in Europe, and when he got back he moved back to Vancouver to help Mom, and Marlu and I came back home the following summer.

When my kids were little we would visit Grampa's house, and he would sit up in his easy chair and beam while his grandchildren played on the floor. He did eventually recover to where he would drive his car, as Mom never was able to drive, and they came down to our house the first Christmas back in Vancouver when Marlu and I lived in the townhouse in Richmond. We had had a rare snowfall a week before, and on Christmas Eve it was melting fast. By the time Dad and Mom arrived, there were foot deep puddles on the road, and I was horrified when Dad arrived at our door soaked from the knees down.

Each year thereafter we would come up with the kids a week before Christmas and put up a Christmas tree with all the old decorations from my childhood. This gave my father great happiness, and it was fun to watch him sitting in his chair and drinking in the chaos around him. In 1978 Marlu had left me, and the kids were in Saskatchewan. So, when my Dad called me to come up on his birthday and decorate the tree a couple of days early, I had no idea that there was a reason for it. Two days later he had the heart attack that killed him, and he ended up in Vancouver General Hospital where he held on for ten days, passing away on December 28, 1978.

In his bedroom closet his best suit was laid out, and in the pocket was his will and instructions to look after Mom. He knew his heart was giving out - how frightening that must have been for him in his last few weeks. To the end he was looking after his family, and hiding his fears away from Mom, knowing that she would be so anxious. His death came as a great shock to Terry and I, and my mother was just devastated, as he had known she would be. At his funeral there were only three friends from work, and my friends the Fitz-Earles - partly due to our stunned inability to phone anyone, and partly because there weren't many friends to call - his family and his work were his whole life.

We buried him in Ocean View cemetery (cremation), just south of the BC Tel building where I worked. I would visit his grave with my mother many times, whenever she wanted to go, and for many years I would find an excuse to take a long lunch hour, walk through beautiful Central Park remembering my wonderful Dad, to spend a few minutes at his graveside. Often my visits were on a Friday, and it was comforting to me to see dozens of teenagers assembled around the grave of some loved one - they were enjoying the peace and beauty of the cemetery - my Dad would have been happy there.

My mother has been such a big part of my life that her story is interwoven with mine in the earlier autobiography. But I have only a very limited knowledge of the early part of her life before she met my Dad. With the help of my Alberta cousins I have tried to get some idea of what life was like in her family. She had three brothers Charles, Clarence (Neil) and Harvey (Fox), and one sister Anne. I am grateful to Aunt Anne and Charlie's wife Aunt Olive for writing down the story of Howard and Katy Redmond and their family in their early years.

Grampa Howard had decided to join the rush to Alberta after the opening up of the area with new railways - and the new province was created in 1906. He was later to be joined by my father in 1919 and Fran's grandfather Edmund Picard who got a land grant near Pincher Creek. In the 1906 census he was living alone in Edmonton, having come out to find work. Soon he was working hauling gravel and stone for the pillars of the High Level bridge. He was joined by his young family in October of 1906, Katy having remained with her mother in Sydney to have her baby Anne.

Mrs. Redmond often told the story how the nuns helped her with her small family on the train. She was nursing the baby and caring for 3 year-old Charlie, and with the upheaval and strain of moving, it was natural that it was a rough trip. The journey took a whole week, and there were no cots for sleeping, so she had to sit on hard wooden slats the whole trip. The CNR train had reached Edmonton only a year before, and in the newly established province there was lots of work building infrastructure, and Howard found work for the railway and soon the family was living in a big house near where the CNR building is now in Edmonton.

Grandma Katy was soon taking in boarders and working very hard with her young family. It was common in those days for women to feed and housekeep for boarders, and in Edmonton there were a lot of young single men on their own. Her mother Sophie McKay (McDonald) had two houses in Sydney looking after boarders, and Howard and Katy were able to live in one of them in the early years after their marriage on 26 June

1901. Charlie came along on 8 May 1903, and Anne on 21 Sep 1906, both born in Sydney. In the 1911 census she had three boarders - Douglas Gordon and two Wells brothers.

Back in Edmonton, the young family lived quite close to the Edmonton General Hospital, which started with only 25 patients in 1895, but had been expanded in 1908. Charlie remembered a family who grazed their cow on the ground of the hospital. Charlie looked after that cow all summer, then found that the cow and family moved away without paying him what they had promised.

Katy was probably helped out by her best friend Effie Dodge (Gordon) from Sydney who moved out to Edmonton shortly after her marriage to Harry in Sept 1907. So it is possible that not only was Effie the first visitor I had after my birth, but that she was also there for my mother's birth on April 15, 1908. It was a rough couple of years for my grandmother, as she lost two babies Earl and Pearl.

Howard was still working on the High Level bridge in 1911, earning \$520 a year, which was a good wage in those days - ten times what my father was earning on the farm in Beeton, and fifteen times what my father's mother was earning as a housekeeper in Nottingham. The bridge went across the North Saskatchewan river, joining what was then the two towns of Strathcona on the north side of the river, and Jasper avenue between 109th and 110th street in Edmonton in the south (they joined up in 1912). It was designed by the CPR to carry rail, streetcars, cars and pedestrians, and was 2549 feet long with a span of 289 feet over the river. Howard worked on constructing the pilings for the 28 supports. Today it is still in use as a one-way bridge, and in the summer is used to run a tourist streetcar. The bridge opened June 2, 1913. A waterfall was added to the bridge in 1982 - a symbol of free money spent foolishly -oil money that health care could have used to good advantage

Howard got horses and started draying & hauling coal from the mines in the river valley. In the winter it was very cold - down to -60 degrees F. It was so cold that the men had to thaw the bridle bits out before putting them in the horses' mouths. Horses were blanketed to prevent chills after a long haul, as they were covered with frost. In 1912, Howard sub-contracted an irrigation project through the Mannix company to construct irrigation ditches for the C.P.R. in Retlaw, Brooks and main

station Tillie where supplies of food, tents, harness and dirt moving equipment were kept. This was a good way from Edmonton - on the Trans Canada highway between Medicine Hat and Calgary, so probably Grandma Katy wasn't getting too much help at home when my uncle Clarence Neil (Gil) was born in 1913.

With the onset of the Great War in 1914-1918 the Brooks project was cancelled. About this time Howard met Ed Petersen who wanted a new manager for his 20 quarters of ranch land in the Halkirk area - his brother-in-law Ernie wishing to quit. Howard rented the ranch of 350 head of cattle. Katy, being a dutiful and obedient wife, shedding tears, gathered up her four small children and moved to the farm for seeding. She returned to Edmonton to put the kiddies in school until the end of the term, then returned to Halkirk to make a home for the family on S.E. 1/4 of sec.24. TWP.38-W-15

Halkirk was a tiny town - in the late 1890s there were several free range ranches. The nearest town was Red Deer, and it took three days each way by wagon to fetch supplies - done only twice a year. The houses were log cabins, a sod and dirt roof. The land had to be cleared of hundreds of buffalo skeletons. Not everyone had even a horse, and walking long distances was very common. Halkirk was named by an early pioneer who came from the Scottish Halkirk, the highland village where Alexander Keith of beer fame was born. Today Halkirk it is known as the birthplace of hockey player Shane Doan.

In 1906 the railway came to Stettler, twenty five miles from Halkirk. Settlers arrived, hauling lumber to build their farm and a town. By the time the Redmonds arrived there was a bank, school, hotel, cemetery, town hall, jail and town well, and even their own grain elevator on a spur line. The early history of Halkirk is published in an ebook: Trails of Tail Creek Country, available free online through Ancestry.com.

I am grateful to Uncle Charlie and Aunt Anne for writing down their memories of the Halkirk era. Charlie's and Anne's stories were one of many published in a book - "The History of Halkirk", which is available at the museum in Halkirk. Most of their story is lifted word for word below. It contained a picture of Anne and Bessie in large hats, aged about 8-11 - the only picture I have of my mother in her childhood.

The ranch was six miles north of Halkirk - it was during the first World War when farm help was scarce. The Redmonds hired an elderly gentleman named Ed Poate, and another middle aged man Simon Boyce. The children walked to school through the Larsen farmland and Paul Farnall's field. They went to Rosebank School and their first teacher was Miss Upham. She had quite a large class, as there were eight or nine grades. School opened in the spring when the roads became passable, and went right through to Christmas when the students put on a Christmas Concert.

1915 proved a good year with moisture falling at the right time. A bumper crop was produced in grain and hay. Oats yielded well over 100 bushels per acre. Even so, grain prices usually dropped as the farmers rushed grain to the market to meet the bills for seed, harvesting, hired help and groceries. Anyone who could afford to hold grain until later received much more money - then, with the onset of the war, prices rose steadily.

Charlie quit school and became a cowboy, and jack of all trades, hauling feed at an early age. 1916 started out with good promise, but heavy rains made harvesting difficult. The wheat stood tall as Howard, which was 6'2". Charlie recalls the men mounting the binder on a stoneboat and pulling it with eight head of horses. Much of this crop was harvested after freeze up. Hay was cut and stacked 6 miles from home, which meant a long cold daily chore in the winter.

Mrs Redmond went back to Edmonton for the birth of her youngest son Harvey (Fox) Redmond on Jan. 4, 1917. Effie Dodge was again at her good friend Katy's bedside - it is said that Fox got his lifelong nickname from Effie's comment that he looked like a little fox.

In 1917 mange, a disease causing the cattle to lose their winter coat, struck this prairie area. To treat them, it was necessary to dip the cattle in a vat filled with water at 105 degrees F., with a disinfectant of sulphur and lime. This water was heated by a steam engine owned by Oliver Olgarrad. The vat was constructed by Mr. Becker on his ranch and 2700 head of cattle were brought in from all over the district for two treatments two weeks apart. it was important that each animal was completely submersed in the solution.

It was at this time Charlie remembers staying with his father at the Halkirk hotel. It was built in 1912-13 to replace the old one, which fire had destroyed. Charlie's chore was to milk the two cows that supplied their home with milk, cream, butter and cheese for the family. As these cows didn't run with the herd, they were dipped only once. The hotel is still working today - last year was its hundredth anniversary (it is for sale)!

Winters were long and cold, with severe blizzards coming up suddenly and temperatures dropping rapidly. They were hard on man and beast. Herds of cattle, backs to the wind, drifted with the storm and if caught by a fence would mill about, trampling the weaker, and finally freezing to death. If they fell over a coulee bank, they piled up and smothered in the snow. Losses could prove heavy and devastating to the rancher or farmer. In 1917 the weather was dry and the hay dried up and crops were poor. Feed became a major problem and Howard had to sell a lot of his cattle, as did many others. Those that didn't suffered severe losses by spring from lack of feed.

Anne recalls as a little girl of perhaps ten years old, a kind neighbor "took the Redmond family in his Model T Ford and we went fishing in a boat on Lake Newell. What a thrill to see fish caught and that lovely expanse of water. Going home, a matter of 50 miles, we broke the back axle of the car and were stranded for a day until the men got a repair. Fifty years later in the Alaskan camper, Anne and Charlie returned to camp beside Lake Newell. Another day we had lunch under the Red Deer New Bridge at Stevebille. Mother had just had dinner put out. I had catsup on my plate when a whirlwind coated all the food with sand. I still do not like catsup". This bridge was washed out about 1925.

In 1918 Al Thomas from Omaha, Nebraska rented the land from Petersen with plans to raise horses, so the cattle were sold, and the Redmonds moved to the Osborne place at S.E. 1/4 13. A year later they moved again, into the N.E. 1/4 28-W-15 in the spring of 1920, where a two story house and barns made life more pleasant. The kids went to the Spruce Creek School with the Hook children Alfred, Chris and Mae, and also the Hronek children and two Strader families. The teacher was from Nova Scotia, Miss A. Rice, who boarded with us that winter until school was out.

There was a small slough full of long slough hay, which caught fire one Sunday, and the neighbors came to the rescue. Dad and Charlie were looking for cattle at the time, so Bessie and Anne were to water the saddle horses. As they tried to catch the halter, one of them kicked Anne in the back. She was knocked out for a time and then spent a few days in bed. The French doctor available was usually under the influence of liquor and not too capable. Anne did get attention, and wore a brace, but she still has the curve in the spine between the shoulders, which has caused her some bronchial problems.

Mother and Anne hitched the horses to the democrat buggy and went to Roscoe's mine for some coal. As mother went to get out of the democrat a horse fly stung the horse, and they jumped, throwing mother out breaking her wrist. She was taken to the same doctor in Halkirk, who had been in the service and was back from France. He did a bad job on her wrist, and it bothered her from time to time. Katy was a jolly person, so nothing bothered her for too long. She could always prepare a meal or tea in a hurry. Her home always had an open door.

In 1919 the Asian Flu took many lives. Anne remembers when Mabel Strader died from the flu, and was buried on the hill near Spruce Creek School. Also, one of the Hronek boys was burned to death - he was working around an engine and his clothes caught fire - it was very sad. 55 years later Charlie's family and Anne returned to visit this area and found the house had been destroyed by fire only two months previous.

In 1920 the family moved to the house on the hill, and it was here that parties, cards, dancing etc were provided for young and old, and many will recall learning to dance. This made for a good community life, and broke the monotony of the long winters of hard work and lack of money. My mother's love of cards and other games probably came from this period, and her mother's hospitality kept their home full of other children and laughter. Reeds, Tilks, Fetazs Gales and Tops were the names that filled their social lives in the "house on the hill", where Grandma Katy and her daughters finally had a home big enough to live a full social life.

After another winter of drought and late rains, Howard decided to purchase a farm 17 miles south of Islay with fair buildings and lots of grazing land available, so once again moving time rolled around. Cattle,

horses, machinery and household goods were trekked across country by the men. Mrs. Redmond followed with the children in a Ford Touring car owned and driven by Simon Boyce. Baby Harvey Howard (Fox) had joined the family in Jan 4 1917. Here Howard and Kate and family struggled and worked to make a home, both living the remainder of their lives here.

My mother remembers getting up early to go to school and scrambling over farmers fields in the snow because she had the responsibility of lighting the fireplace in the school so the chill would be off before the younger children arrived. This was the Wildwood school, which was quite a distance to walk from the Redmond farm. When the family arrived in the Islay area Charlie went back to finish school, and he and Anne graduated with honors from Grade 8, as recorded in the Vermilion Standard of 1921. Grade 8 was the end of high school in those days, and it was quite unusual for all of a farm family's children to finish grade 8 before leaving to tend to farm duties.

The area near Islay was still using horses for the plowing, and for drawing water from the lakes and transporting it home. The few roads that existed were muddy, and became impassible in the winter, so school was still a one room schoolhouse, and the students had to be able to reach the school by walking over the neighbours' farms. Lynda remembers that Grandma's house didn't have running water, and that neither did her father Charlie's house when Lynda married in 1970.

Janet Hebert, who was to marry Fox, the youngest son of the Redmond family, went to school a dozen years after my mother, and remembers having to board at the Kitscoty school over the winter. A former bank building and a small structure originally planned as a hospital were modified as boys' and girls' quarters respectively. This allowed teachers to teach one or two grades. As roads became better, the system was eventually replaced by the school bus system where larger schools were built, and students were bussed to schools, and classes were mostly all in the same grade. Charlie loved driving the kids to school in a bus, and was a school bus driver for over fifty years.

Bessie and her sister Anne were close to their mother, but quite competitive with each other. My mother resented that she, being the more sociable with boys, would be the first one to attract an older boy,

but then Anne, being more his age, would steal him away. This was a pattern that was repeated several times during her teen years. Later after she was married, she often mentioned her fears that Anne had followed our family to Vancouver because she was in love with my Dad.

Mrs. Redmond was a good cook and many people ate there as many a grateful bachelor could tell you. She grew a big garden and always milked cows so she had dairy products. She baked lovely bread and pastries. Charlie could always pick out her cake at dances, parties and picnics. She was a faithful church member and belonged to the Red Cross and Womens Institute. As an eight year old, I remember her kitchen as being huge, and Grandma always seemed to be cooking something. Anne found her calling as a professional cook, and after she retired, as housekeeping and caring for the elderly. But I can attest that my mother Bessie could put on a pretty nice Sunday roast beef dinner, and that her picnic lunches were delicious, so Grandma Katy trained her daughters well!

Howard was a big strong man, but his chest condition had troubled him all of his life, and on Dec. 29 1933 he passed away from emphysema. Bessie was now 25, and decided to leave the farm life behind, and take a secretarial course in Edmonton. Her mother's good friend Effie Dodge was now following Katy's footsteps in running a large boarding house, and my mother was to live with her for ten years. During this time she worked for the Bank of Montreal - I wondered why I was so drawn to playing bank teller in my youth, and so enjoyed being the teller in the Junior Achievement bank in high school!

Charlie was already out working at various farming jobs, including Grain Shaker in the granaries, and was self-supporting. Grandma Katy kept the farm going with farm laborers, and occasional help from her sons and her brother Uncle Dan who moved out from Nova Scotia and had a farm not too distant. No-one seems to know much about Neil (Gil), but he was grown and working on his own farm not too far away, and visited home frequently. Fox, the beloved baby of the family, was just 15, living at home, and he was a big help with the farm.

Much of the heavy labour was done by the farm hand Andrew Morris. Quoting from cousins Lynda and Sharon's account ..."He was with Grandma Katy from before Grandpa Howard's death until his own death

from cancer in 1954". I remember Andy as being very kind to me, holding me on his lap and telling me stories when our family visited Grandma in 1950. I remembered him as a short strong man with several missing teeth. "He was born in Russia and came to Canada in 1930. He first came to Toronto and then came west on a harvest excursion. He went to work for Howard and Kate Redmond and stayed there until 1953 when Kate Redmond passed away. He helped Anne get the farm ready for sale and then came to Charles Redmond's for the winter until his death on June 5, 1954. He died of cancer in the University Hospital in Edmonton."

Janet Hebert (to be Fox's wife) remembers Neil as a more worldly man than the rest of the Redmonds, having a taste for Opera and classical music. She doesn't remember when Neil left the farm, but it must have been before the War. She isn't sure what Neil did for a living then, but she remembers him from his visits to Grandma Katy's. Neil did come from his farm north of Highway 16 between Vermilion and Vegreville to attend Fox's funeral.

Bessie was the first one to marry, in 1938 in Edmonton, followed by Charlie in 1941, Harvey (Fox) in 1944 and Neil in 1945. Charlie married Olive Barnett, owned their own farm closer to Vermilion, and had two daughters Lynda and Sharon. Like their mother before them, the Redmond women had trouble birthing babies - Bessie losing her first-born in 1940, and Olive losing her last three. Gil was around Vermilion longer, and like Anne, was in the army reserves during the war. He married Ruby Cook in Edmonton in 1945. They were soon divorced, and eventually Neil moved to Victoria, and married a nurse, Lorraine White, in 1954. He died young at the age of 65, the same year as my father in 1978. Aunt Anne tried to motivate me to visit his widow, as Lorraine was living in the Vancouver area, but to my regret, I never did.

Janet Hebert remembers having a major crush on Fox when she was barely a teenager - Fox was nine years older. She remembers Bessie as being from an earlier generation, and remembers her as being sociable and friendly, more socially skilled than her sister. Bessie was very good friends with Janet's mother, Jean Drysdale, who had divorced her first husband Jesse Mohr in Idaho, and moved with her father Frank Hebert to claim a homestead near the Redmond farm. Jean married Charlie Drysdale, from a long-time local farming family.

She remembers from her youth in Vermilion that their farm was quite close to the school - but that in the winter time when she was a bit older she had to board at the school because the roads weren't graded and became impassible in the winter. The kids from Kitscoty would be bussed to school, but she lived in the school building, which was an old converted bank building, and would be there months before and after Christmas. Times were hard during the Depression, so she and her classmates would pay for their board with farm goods, getting credit for baking pies and preserves and contributing other farm produce. Water was fetched from the nearby slough in winter by hauling a big sleigh behind a team of horses. The well water was very hard - so was hard to use for washing clothes. They made their own soap - it was made from a recipe including lye.

She met Fox through the local social events - dances, young people's meetings through the Presbyterian church, and had admired him from afar since she was a pre-teen. They met at local picnics put on by the Presbyterian youth group. Fox was running Grandma Katy's farm, Charlie having bought himself a farm some distance away near Highway 16. Their romance bloomed, and when she became pregnant with Diana, she and Fox were married privately. Their marriage was a simple one with few guests, in a church she couldn't remember, in town (Vermilion).

She and Fox lived with Grandma Katy Redmond in the first years after they were married, until they could get set up on their own place. She remembers my grandmother as having a good nature, and that she was kind to her and Fox. Grandma Katy was a very hospitable woman, known for her ability to put on a fine spread for friends and kin at the drop of a hat. When she heard her guests' car arriving in the driveway, she would rush upstairs, find her finest dress and slip it on over her more modest housedress - and sometime it was too short to cover the housedress below. Her specialty was potato cake.

Meanwhile, Bessie and Reg had constructed a large new house near downtown Edmonton. Janet had a great memory of my mother at this time. She and Fox were invited to visit Mom and Dad in their new home in Edmonton - they were given the master bedroom, and she remembers the house in the Highlands as being like a mansion, with large beautiful rooms on two stories, and that she and Fox were treated really special. Highlands is a residential neighbourhood in north east Edmonton

overlooking the North Saskatchewan River valley. The long bus ride to Edmonton to visit my parents was along a gravel road. They went downtown on the bus to visit Effie and Harry Dodge for a couple of days.

It was about this time that the best family photo at Grandma's house was taken, with Lynda and me in the front as tiny babies, Charlie and Olive and her father Mr. Jack on one side, and Bessie and Reg with me on the other. Lynda was the first-born by less than two months. Fox was in the top row on Grandma Katy's left, and Janet on his left, partially hidden. She didn't know the family to the left side of her and Fox and the boy to Charlie's right, but they were probably Barnetts from Olive's family.

Anne and Neil (Gil) both joined the army reserves during World War II, with Anne working as a cook at the army training camp in southern Alberta. Neil joined the reserves, but served in the reserves in Alberta, and was never called to the front. Their stories were told in the book "Oxen Tales and Jet Trails", and shows them in their army uniforms.

After the great snowstorm that had made Bessie and Reg decide to move to Vancouver, Bessie went back to the farm to her family for Terry's birth, before taking the train to Vancouver to rejoin Reg - repeating the history of her mother's trip to Edmonton right after birthing Anne in Sydney. That snowstorm was on Nov 20, 1946 the same night that my sweetheart Fran was born in Blairmore with her mother's doctor having to make it to her home walking through three feet of snow. Her father Edmund Picard had come out to Alberta about the same time as my mother's parents, to homestead near Beaver Mines, a few miles from Blairmore in the Crow's Nest Pass.

My mother's first trip home to Vermilion came with the tragic death of her beloved youngest brother Fox on 17 Jun 1948. It was a great shock to the family - Fox was much loved and there were hundreds at his funeral, including the whole Redmond family. Janet had both of her children in Islay in 1945 with Dr. Sweet, the local doctor - Diana in January and Howard in December. She remembers the Islay hospital as a large white building of two stories, with the downstairs for the men, and the upstairs for the women. Charlie's wife Olive was later to work at this hospital as a nurse. Dr. Sweet put Fox in the hospital to remove an infected appendix, but the operation was botched, and Olive remembers her great concern that he had a serious infection after the operation. He

passed away a few days later, and Dr. Sweet was reprimanded when it was found that the appendix that was removed was perfectly healthy.

Dr. Sweet was so ashamed that for years he would cross to the opposite side of the street when he saw Janet. Janet later forgave him, though, because a post-mortem revealed that Fox had advanced meningitis (a fatal disease of the nerves in the spinal chord). It was undiagnosed, and made worse by the trauma of the operation, but there was no treatment for it back then - he would probably have died within a few months even if the unnecessary operation hadn't been done. My mother was very shocked and saddened by his unexpected death, as were all his many friends and family.

Fox's son Howard told me that there was always a little bad blood between his mother and Katy Redmond because after his death, she had to buy back the section she had given to Fox, and therefore had to pay for it twice. But Janet told me this wasn't so, and Mrs. Redmond was always gracious and kind to her, and understood that she had no other means to bring up her two children, and had to sell the land back so she could make a new life in Edmonton. She was very grateful to Katy for the time she and Fox lived with her early in their marriage.

Janet was unlucky with husbands, as her second marriage to Tom Stoddart in Edmonton ended when Tom drowned, and her third husband Joe Warner died of leukemia. She had eleven children - five boys and six girls, ten grandchildren and sixteen great grandchildren, including the eldest boy who was in his early twenties when Aunt Janet moved to a care home in Duncan BC where we visited her in 2014. Most of them live in and around Edmonton. My cousin Lynda visited Janet when she was married to Tom Stoddart in Edmonton, and remembers him as being a very strict father with the kids. Their house was very small, and Lynda wondered how they found room for all those kids. They had five sons before having a daughter. The other three daughters must have been step-children, children of Mr. Warner?

In January 1953 Bessie's mother Katy fell ill, and needed gall bladder surgery. Olive, Charlie's wife worked at Islay Hospital and cared for Katy after her surgery. Lori, Neil's wife, came home from Victoria to help in Katy's care. Three months later, Apr 23 1953, Katy passed away at the age of 72. Bessie woke up at the exact time of her mother's death and

knew that she had just passed. She went home to attend the funeral. Katy was buried beside her husband and her son in the Islay cemetery, to be joined about forty years later by Anne and Charlie. After Grandma Katy's death, Charlie and Neil fell out, and Charlie kicked him off Grandma's farm. This led to hard feelings, and Neil didn't have much contact with the rest of the family after that.

Bessie loved being a mother, and spent most of her time making her children a happy home. She played cards with me for many hours during all of my childhood illnesses, and introduced our family to many games which we played boisterously and enjoyably right through our teen-age years. She loved playing with the neighbourhood children, energetically chasing them around the house and yard and following their exploits. Although neither she nor my father were church-goers, she saw to it that we took part in religion, and enjoyed participating in cub leadership when Terry and I were Cub Scouts and later boy scouts.

Almost every weekend she made up a big picnic basket and our family would be off to the beach or the parks. Her social life was almost entirely with her husband and kids when we were small - I can recall only once when she brought adult friends to our house. She put all her efforts into making our family life happy. It wasn't until we were almost in our teens that she talked Dad into taking square dance lessons, and spent a bit more time with adults. She knew all the mothers on our street - but when the mothers were approaching forty, she joined them in deciding to remain 39 for years, and it was around then that she began calling herself Betty.

My mother was not tall (about 5'4"), but she was strong and sturdy with big strong bones, and had no trouble keeping up with her kids and their gang of friends on the street. But in her forties and fifties, she had trouble sleeping, and took a lot of sleeping pills - phenobarbs - and became quite anxious at times. She also had curvature of the spine, and this caused her to go to chiropractors for relief as she got older. She was a very good bowler, and remained a 200 average bowler into her early seventies. She kept all her many bowling trophies, and had a great deal of enjoyment, bowling three times a week at times.

Dad took good care of her, and they were very loving to each other throughout their forty year marriage. As she got older she had only the

very most expensive glasses, and later when she became hard of hearing - he spared no expense on hearing aids. Betty never drove a car, and Dad would drive her everywhere, and they enjoyed playing pitch and putt golf at Queen Elizabeth Park before and after his retirement. When Terry moved back home after his unfortunate Europe trip, she became quite worried for him as the beer bottles piled up in his basement room.

She and Dad were on vacation at their favorite place on the beach in Penticton when Dad had his first heart attack, while swimming on his back in the shallow waters of Skaha Lake. It was a harrowing experience for both of them, and he was to spend several weeks in hospital before being allowed to return to Vancouver. Mom had to take on most of the responsibilities in the house, as Dad was in pretty bad shape, and often didn't feel safe to drive. She was very fearful for him, but was not really able to make him exercise or live a normal life in the following eight years that they lived at 1136 W. 52nd Ave.

During this time, Betty got more serious about her gardening, making her back yard quite lovely, with a magnificent display of roses in the side garden. After Marlu and I moved our family back to Richmond in 1972, we would visit quite often - and really enjoyed her garden, as she enjoyed watching her grandchildren. Terry was around to help with the yard work, but inside the house Mom took on all the cooking and housework - Dad would normally stick to his easy chair and watch the antics of his grandchildren, while Mom participated much more.

Dad's death in 1978, although not unexpected, was a major shock, and Mom and Terry and I helplessly guzzled enormous quantities of instant coffee - boiling water seemed to be all we could manage. She was so deeply distressed that we all became catatonic. I pray that my memory is faulty, but I don't think we even managed to call Aunt Anne before the funeral, and no-one called Mom's bowling friends. So we had a pretty lonely little funeral at the Boal Chapel in North Vancouver, with only three of Dad's work mates who had seen our obituary in the Province, one of our friends, and, I dearly hope, Aunt Anne, as it would have pained her to be left out - but I have no memory of calling her or even having anyone back to the house after.

My cousins in Alberta told me that Mom had been prone to bouts of sadness in her youth, and had a mournful streak in her, but I was

unprepared for the depth of her despair after Dad's death. The worst time came on the one year anniversary when I had to take her to the psychiatric ward at Vancouver General between Christmas and New Years for a week of care and recovery. It was more than two years before she was able to cope with her sadness and return to some semblance of normality. Of course I was in little better shape than she, as I was going through the most traumatic part of my marriage breakup.

Betty slowly recovered to where she could look after herself in their retirement home on 52nd Ave, but she never really stopped mourning Dad and missing him terribly. She shrank into herself and gradually gave up bowling, feeling isolated from others by her worsening deafness, preferring to live in silence rather than in the noise of social gatherings. By 1989 she no longer felt comfortable in her home, and one day she walked down the street and offered her house to a local developer and negotiated a fair price. After a sad day watching most of her collection of furniture and memorabilia go out the door in a giant garage sale, she moved into an apartment on 38th Ave in Kerrisdale.

It wasn't until she was moved in that I realized she was actually feeling very unsafe. We signed up for one of those silent alarm companies ("I've fallen and I can't get up"), but it didn't really work for her. When a year and a half later the landlord gave notice that the building was coming down to be replaced by a high rise, Betty became quite frightened, and Terry and I had to scramble to find her a new place right away. By now she was using a walker for the four block walk into Kerrisdale, and becoming less and less mobile. The only nod she made to her gardening passion was a huge philodendron, which she had regrown from one of its leaves after it had reached the ceiling in her living room.

In her youth my mother had smoked cigarettes, and Dad was a pipe smoker. When my asthma got bad the doctors told them they had to stop smoking - and they did, for me. I used to feel guilty about that until all the health problems with smoking became better known. Dad never smoked again, but Mom began smoking a little when Terry, a heavy smoker, was living in their basement, long after I had left home. After Dad's death she took solace in smoking, one time almost burning herself to death when she fell asleep in her bed with a lit cigarette. Fortunately the bed just smouldered, and she woke up from the smoke before there were any flames.

This became a problem in finding a senior's residence, as most of them wouldn't take smokers. We chose a Burnaby high rise near Brentwood Mall called Rideau Manor. I was familiar with it because it was only a block from BC Tel's Education Center, and used to be a great place for lunch, as it was used as a student residence and training centre for BCIT students learning to be waiters and cooks. When it became a Senior's centre, the food services were taken over by Forster's, a popular gourmet restaurant. So visiting Mom at dinner time, after work at the nearby BC Tel "boot", became a great pleasure for me, as the meals were Sooo Gooooood!

Betty finally relaxed and felt safe and cared for at Rideau Manor, but gradually she lost her mobility, and rarely went outside the building. At the end she couldn't really make it half a block up the small hill to visit her doctor's office. Her unit was very nice, and she was happy in her one bedroom apartment, sometimes baking in the common floor kitchen. It was a nuisance at meal times, as the elevators would be over-taxed, and long waits were common. Sometimes she would play cribbage in the lounge, and at meal-times she would join in the local gossip, keeping track of who was sleeping with whom. She was still capable of the odd catty remark at age 82!

There were several visits to Burnaby General emergency - she was probably having mini-strokes from the irregular heart-beat that I have inherited. It always amazed me how unfazed she was by these small medical emergencies - chatting with the nurses as they took her blood. She seemed to be content and unconcerned by her worsening health. Finally she was told she would not be allowed to return to her new home in Rideau Manor, as they weren't equipped for extensive nursing care, so she moved into Burnaby General. Often when I came to visit her I would find her outside the hospital entrance with her I-V cart trailing her - time for a relaxing smoke.

There is a nice care facility near my home in Richmond called Rosewood Manor, and Betty joined the waiting list. Before she could get in, however, the hospital found her a place in New Westminster called Dogwood Manor. It was quite dreadful there - rooms were shared, and in the few months she was there she had three room-mates die. One of them was a wanderer - she would pace the halls all during the night, and Betty was wakened many a night by nurses trying to get her room-mate

into her bed. Still, Betty remained in good spirits, and didn't seem to be bothered by all of this. I think she was relieved to be able to just go with the flow, without needing to make any decisions. Throughout all of this, Terry was a frequent visitor, and I think he was able to allay his mother's fears for his well-being, and eventually to say their goodbyes.

At Rosewood Manor she had her own single room with a nice window box where I could put in a few flowers to cheer her days. It was at the opposite end from the dining room, and she frequently complained at having to crawl along the long halls to get to meals. We found a device she could hang around her neck and plug into the TV so she could hear it. Some of the less savvy housekeeping staff would occasionally get a rude surprise when they pulled out the cord so they could clean the room, only to be met by a loud blast of sound!

Betty had always enjoyed reading, though she wasn't quite the prodigious reader that Fran and her father were. She liked doing crosswords, and throwing dice by herself to play Yahtzee, or to throw lettered dice and try to make words for maximum points (a kind of solitaire Scrabble). Her favorite game was to find a long word, and see how many different shorter words she could make by rearranging the letters. She remained mentally alert to the end.

Her death was a quiet peaceful one, during which she was able to give me the most wonderful gift - as Fran and I sat by her bed-side watching her sleep, she wakened and gave me the most loving smile that I've ever seen, saying "Jim, I just can't seem to die". It was the last time she ever spoke, and the memory of her wonderful goodbye will always be with me.

We held her funeral at the lovely Minoru Chapel where Fran and I had been married. My cousin Lynda Moses came out from Alberta, and we had the organist play "The Old Rugged Cross", a Redmond tradition. She was buried next to her beloved mate in the Ocean View Memorial cemetery. She was the last of the Redmond family, and the name died with her, as the only male Redmond cousin - Howard -had passed away years before without having children. Uncle Charlie had come out to Vancouver four years earlier to visit Anne and Bessie. They all knew this would be the last time, as Anne had had her stroke, and Charlie had the beginnings of the cancer that would kill him. I am grateful to Fran for

realizing the significance, and capturing the three siblings in a wonderful photograph that sits over my TV, with the three of them just enjoying life and remembering their lives together.

THE FAMOUS REDMONDS AND DEVEREUX

My mother's surname Redmond had an illustrious and long history in County Wexford in Ireland. The first Redmond to come to Nova Scotia around 1751 was David Redmond, and he married Mary Devereux in the budding town of Halifax in 1766. This was only the latest example of marriages between Redmonds and Devereux, as the two families histories had been intertwined for many centuries. David wasn't the first Redmond to marry a Devereux girl - according to Shaun Davis, that honor goes to the 1265 marriage of Margaret Devereux and Alexander Raymond, grandson of Raymond LeGros, and son of Redmond, from whom the surname came. Because these two families were so illustrious, there is a robust heraldry (lineage) of the Redmond first born sons from Raymond LeGros (1166) to John Walsingham Cooke Redmond and on to 1888

[Irish pedigrees: or, The origin and stem of the Irish nation, Volume 2 P352-371](#)

and for the Devereux from 1100 to 1600.... [Devereux family tree](#) and other more recent trees.

But let us begin at the beginning - a famous medieval battle that brought together the three Irish branches of my family - Redmonds, Devereux and Ffrench. Most of the following histories were taken from four books in the Family History Library in Salt Lake City:

"The Promontory of Hook" by Billy Colfer
941.5 A1

"An Account of the Anglo-Norman family of Devereux, of Balmagir, County" by Gabriel O'C Redmond on microfilm 1559435 Item1

"Families of Co. Wexford"
942.885 D4

by Hilary Murphy

"The Wexford Gentry"
941.885 D3

by Art Kavanagh & Rory Murphy

THE NORMAN LANDING AT BAGINBUM 1170

In the 12th century Ireland there were several kingdoms, Leinster being the one that included Wexford. It was ruled by Dermot MacMurragh. In 1128 Turlough O'Connor had marched on Hy Kinsella in Leinster and a bloody war ensued – Dermot was defeated, but he later recovered and became the chief king of Leinster. In 1152 he abducted the wife of Tiernan O'Rourke (who apparently was only too willing to be abducted), but she was recovered by Turlough O'Connor the following year. When Turlough's son Ruairi took the throne he and Rourke invaded Hy Kinsella, defeated Dermot, and burned his palace at Ferns to the ground. Ferns became the capital of the [Kingdom of Leinster](#), and also the Capital of Ireland when the kings of that southern part of the province established their seat of power there. It was a very large city then but shrunk in the fire that destroyed most of it.

Dermot escaped and went to seek help from Henry II, the Norman King of England and France. The king introduced him to the Earl of Pembroke, named Strongbow, in the south of Wales, and he agreed to mount an invasion of Ireland in return for the hand of Dermot's daughter in marriage and succession to the kingdom of Leinster. An advance party led by Maurice Fitzgerald and Dermot marched on the town of Wexford – the resident Norsemen were overawed by their warlike appearance and surrendered.

Strongbow sent an advanced party of 10 Knights and 70 archers under the leadership of Raymond le Gros, and they landed at Baginbun in May 1170. The landing place was chosen as part of the headland already fortified by the Celtic promontory fort. The point of land at the end of the headland was Hook, later to be home to the Redmond House, and one of

the first lighthouses in Ireland. It was at the mouth of the Barrow River on a hook of land jutting out into the Atlantic Ocean.

Raymond was joined by Hervey de monte Marisco, Strongbow's uncle, and they began the construction of further earthworks across the narrow neck of the headland towards the city of Waterford. An army of about 3000 Norse and Irish advanced from Waterford, forcing the Normans to retreat to their fortifications, which had been provisioned with many cattle from the surrounding district. These cattle were driven out against the advancing Irish and in the confusion that followed, the Normans attacked, capturing over 70 of Waterford's leading citizens. Their limbs were broken and they were thrown off the cliffs as a warning to other would-be attackers. Raymond then waited behind his ramparts for the arrival of Strongbow and his army three months later.

Raymond's victory was seen as a turning point in Irish history and the following rhyme came into being: "At the creeke of Baginbun, Ireland was lost and won." The remains of the Norman fortifications at Baginbun at the present day consist of a double embankment with a deep trench in between, running across the width of the headland into Waterford harbor.

Raymond LeGros was so named because "Raymond was very stout, and a little above the medium in height, and was very active, and lively in habits, despite his corpulence. His hair was yellow, and curly ; he had large grey eyes, a somewhat prominent (aquiline) nose, and his countenance was high coloured, and of a cheerful and pleasant expression. He was prudent, temperate, and frugal in his habits, and his first care was ever for the welfare of his troops, often himself passing whole nights without sleep, going the rounds and challenging the sentries to keep them on the alert, and prevent surprise. He was not given to anger, and was insensible to fatigue, always thinking more how he could promote the welfare of his men, than of commanding them—he was ever their servant rather than their master. To sum up his excellencies in a few words, he was a liberal, kind, and circumspect man, and although a daring soldier, and consummate general, even in military affairs prudence was his highest quality. He was second in command only to Strongbow himself (after whom the famous cider was named).

Raymond LeGros had a son named Redmond, and his descendants took his first name as their surname, so this famous general was the first of our Redmond family. There is a rich and illustrious history of Redmonds in Ireland, but of course our David Redmond was a modest fisherman, probably only distantly related to the personages mentioned in the Redmond history below, and since I do not know where in Wexford that our pioneer David came from, it hasn't been possible to link to this family.

The Norman families that came with Strongbow and participated in the spoils included Devereux and French (whose descendant Christopher French was the landlord of my paternal grandmother's grand-parents in Elphin, Roscommon, Ireland). They were among the aristocratic class that enjoyed power in Ireland until the Reformation at the end of the 17th century when some of them were displaced by English Protestants. Philip Devereux was the first of the family to come to Ireland. He was the younger son of the Herefordshire branch of the family which later boasted the Earls of Essex in Elizabethan times.

THE REDMOND OF THE HALL

The lands of Hook (a promontory at the south-east corner of Waterford Harbour) were granted to Sir Alexander Redmond soon after the Norman conquest. He was the eldest grandson of Raymond LeGros, son of his eldest son Redmond, from whom the surname came. The name Redmond or Raymond is derived from "Ragin Mund", roughly meaning "Wise Protection". Alexander married Margaret Devereux. The first lighthouse in Ireland was constructed in the 1300s at the tip of the lands of Hook, and was to become the last light that Wexford fishermen would see after heading out over the Atlantic to the cod fishery in the Grand Banks, Newfoundland.

The Redmonds built their first castle at Houseland on the eastern side of the peninsula probably in the 13th century. There is a video of what it looks like now (Google Houseland or Loftus Hall, Wexford, Redmond). After some time when they were well established in the area, the Redmonds moved to the other side of the peninsula. There, near a sandy

beach on Waterford harbor, Alexander and Margaret's descendants Robert and Walter built the castellated mansion known as "Redmond's Hall" in the early fourteenth century, and the family became known as the "Redmonds of the Hook and the Hall".

The hall was built in the 1300s during the time of the Black Plague. The first Black Plague struck Ireland in 1349, coming to Wexford from the port town of Waterford, wherever there were ships with rats. Fishermen, sailors and persons who lived by the sea were frequently victims and the toll was heavy, wiping out most monks in monasteries, as they were caring for the sick. Death came quickly with the infection and entire towns were completely wiped out within weeks of the appearance of the Plague. It was reported that symptoms could result in death occurring within 5 or 6 hours. As an Italian noted, you could have lunch with your friends and supper with your Ancestors. Usually if a family member was infected the entire family - women, children, infants - would all be found dead of the Bubonic Plague. Redmonds were lucky, largely surviving in their relatively isolated location. Over a third of the population of Europe perished.

Members of the Redmond family were connected with the Templars of Templetown, and the Redmonds held their land as part of the Templar Preceptory of Kilcloggen. The Knights Templar was one of several 'knightly orders' founded during the crusades. Forming a new caste of 'warrior monks' they took oaths to protect the Holy Land and Christian pilgrims. At the same time members of the knightly orders strived to lead an exemplary Christian life, mainly based on the rules of medieval orders of monks. From humble beginnings the Templars established an empire, consisting of strongholds and estates all over Europe and the Holy Land. Known as ferocious warriors, they were also operating as bankers and moneylenders.

It was their financial empire that more than likely caused their downfall - and the heavily indebted King Phillip IV of France accused the Knights Templar of heresy in 1307. Templars were burned at the stake in Paris. The first Templars may well have entered Ireland with Strongbow's Norman knights in 1169. After the events in Paris, the Knights Templar in Ireland were arrested under suspicion of heresy and placed in Dublin Castle. Between fifteen and thirty knights were imprisoned, most having

seen more than forty years of service with the Order. (Ireland seems to have been a retirement posting for veteran Templars).

The Templar Trials in Ireland commenced in 1310 at Saint Patrick's Cathedral. Accusations based on hear-say were directed at the knights, but no evidence could be found, and no confessions were forthcoming. The trials ultimately fizzled out, ending after six months in a bit of an anti-climax. The Irish Templars were admonished to be good Christians and most were just pensioned off.

If you're interested, check out History of the Templars

<http://www.doyle.com.au/Awen/awen3.html>

In their new home the Redmonds lived and prospered for several centuries. In 1598 Redmond of the Hook was mentioned among the principal gentlemen of the county. Their peace and prosperity came to an end with the outbreak of war in 1641 between Irish confederates and the British crown. Nearby Duncannon Fort was manned by 100 men, and reinforced by 200 men from Bristol under Capt. Anthony Weldon and Capt. Thomas Aston. At Shielbaggan a party of soldiers from the fort were attacked and routed by a group of Irish confederates under Captain Rossiter and Major James Butler – the English retreated to the Fort.

Redmond was of 'Old English' stock and sided with the Confederates – his castle could be seen clearly from the walls of Duncannon Fort, and it was known as a place which gave great relief to the rebels! So Captain Aston came by sea from Duncannon with 90 men and landed near the Hall. Although he was 68 years of age Alexander Redmond barricaded the Hall and defended it courageously, aided by his sons Robert and Michael and his tenants. Even with the help of two cannons from the ship they were unable to breach the castle. Meanwhile the Irish, still encamped at Shielbaggan, had heard of the attack and marched post haste to the assistance of the Redmonds. Aided perhaps by the heavy sea-mist that had descended on the peninsula the Irish army attacked Capt. Aston's party, killing all but thirty soldiers who escaped to the boats.

After this attack Redmond Hall was left in peace until the arrival of Cromwell in 1649. Following the sack of Wexford, General Ireton lay

siege to Duncannon Fort, which was in Confederate hands since 1645. Cromwell marched on Ross and during the siege groups of soldiers were sent to subdue castles which were in the hands of the Irish. The Suttons castle at Ballykeeroge was burned and twenty-three members of the family lost their lives. Possibly to avoid a similar fate, Redmond surrendered on favourable terms. He was about seventy-five at the time and he was permitted to end his days in his ancestral home. He died within a year or two and was buried with his ancestors in the graveyard at Churchtown. The other members of the family left the Hook and the estate which they had occupied for four hundred years.

The coat of arms of the Redmond family commemorates Alexander Redmond's defence of Redmond's Hall against Cromwell's army. Search for [Redmond family crest](#) for a picture [Redmond family crest](#) .

The arms illustrated are those of the Norman family. The crest, a flaming beacon, represents the oldest lighthouse in Ireland, off the peninsula of the Hook, the area most closely linked with the family; in the Annals they are described as Clanna Reamainn Tighe Solais, "the Redmond family of the lighthouse". The arms themselves commemorate Alexander Redmond's defence of Redmond's Hall against Cromwell's army, in which woosacks were used to protect the defenders.

Redmond's lands and the lands of the other Irish Catholics in the area were confiscated and granted to Sir Nicholas Loftus of Fethard. The grants were confirmed by the Act of settlement 1666. When he died his estates passed to his brother Henry who was the first of the family to reside at Redmond Hall which then became the principal residence of the Loftus Family.

To establish the new name of the property he had the following inscription erected on the entrance piers at Portersgate: "Henry Loftus of Loftus Hall Esq. 1680". Loftus repaired the old Mansion House, added other considerable buildings of lime and stone and enclosed his gardens with high stone walls to preserve some fruit trees, newly planted there, and his descendants dwell in that house now.

In 1707 there was great unrest in Co. Wexford because men were being enlisted to fight for King James III, and Mr. Nicholas Loftus requested that a guard consisting of a sergeant and twelve men should be detached from

Duncannon Fort and sent to Loftus Hall. He threatened to extinguish the light house at the Tower of Hook (one of the oldest accessible lighthouses in the world, built in the 1300s and manned by the nearby monks). Nicholas was the eldest son of Henry Loftus and he was the first of that branch of the family to be raised to the peerage. In 1751 he was made Baron Loftus of Loftus Hall, and Viscount Ely in 1756.

A map and description of the Loftus Hall demesne, dated 1771 shows that the modern field pattern had already been developed at that time. Even the field names, in many cases, were the same as those used at the present day. Many of the bigger fields have been subdivided into smaller areas, but the original fields were surrounded by lime and stone walls and are still easily recognizable. The Deer Park, for example, has been divided into five smaller fields but the old boundary walls still remain, complete with observation holes and entrance piers.

In 1870 the old Loftus Hall was leveled to the ground and the present modern mansion was built on the same site. In the field behind the present Hall, the remains of a circular building, about forty feet in diameter, can still be traced. This is the only trace that now exists of the castle built on this spot by the Redmonds. The field is known as the 'Ring Field.' In 1917 Loftus Hall was bought by an order of nuns, the Sisters of Providence and has been used as a convent since that time. Googling Loftus Hall gives current travel accounts of good times had in Loftus hall, which had become a hotel with a pub. A video of what the area looks like today is available on You-tube. The modern Loftus Hall has now been sold, and the new owners are renovating. Wikipedia also has a fine entry for Loftus Hall.

THE DEVEREUX FAMILY AT BALLYMAGIR

(excerpt from 'Families of County Wexford' P 72-76 by Hilary Murphy)

According to Hilary Murphy the name is taken from the town of Evreux in Normandy, from where the first of the family went to England with William the Conqueror in 1066. According to Dr. Gabriel Redmond the Devereux historian, Walter D'Evreux was one of the leaders of the Norman army at Hastings. The Devereuxs are descended from the Duke

of Normandy, ancestors of William the Conqueror and his successors on the throne of England.

From the Devereux family in Herefordshire sprang the famous Earls of Essex. The first to bear the title was Walter Devereux, who was Earl Marshall of Ireland at the time of his death in Dublin in 1576. The second Earl of Essex, Robert Devereux, was the unlucky favourite of Queen Elizabeth who had him beheaded in the Tower of London in 1601 after his failure to subdue the great Hugh O'Neill in Ireland.

Sir Philip Devereux probably also received some lands from the Earl of Pembroke (Strongbow) or King Henry II for his part in the Norman invasion of Ireland, but there is no surviving record. However, he married Alicia, the daughter and heiress of Sir Alexander de Headon, knight, of Ballymagir, and with her obtained the manor and lands of Ballymagir, which presumably had been a grant by Strongbow to their father, a knight also in his train. Sir Philip had a son Hugh, who made the manor of Ballymagir, situated in the barony of Bargy, the hereditary seat of the Devereux family. Ballymagir had been an important pre-Norman fortified site. In Irish, it means town of the hares.

In 1407 there was a saying that gave a glimpse of the personalities of the leaders of the Strongbow invasion : 'Stiff Gifford, gay Clifford, Laughing Cheevers, Cross Colfer, Proud Devereux, daring Redmond, Dogged Lambert, Gentleman Browne". Looks like their Pride and Daring didn't make it all the way down the thirty generations to me.

From the earliest time, the Wexford settlers were led in their wars by a Devereux, and the number of Constables, Sheriffs, Justices and other officials which the family supplied to the county is too large to reckon. Right through the centuries, from 1170 to 1641, Devereux was the bulwark of the English in Wexford. Sir Nicholas of Ballymagir, and the heads of other branches of the family, joined the Catholic Confederation in 1641 and are listed amongst the forfeiting proprietors in the Cromwellian confiscation of Catholic land. It appears, however, that the family was able to remain in Ballymagir.

Sir Stephen Devereux, who was knighted in 1307, was responsible for the completion of the new wall round Wexford town, begun in the reign of King John. Sir Nicholas, who succeeded to Ballymagir in 1540, was

known as 'The White Knight' and was one of the most powerful men the family ever produced. In 1543 he married the Lady Catherine le Poer (Power), daughter of Sir Richard, Baron of Curraghmore, Co. Waterford. As a marriage settlement he received 'a sheep from every sheepphouse and a cow from every cowhouse in the county'. His descendants Ellen and Am married into the Suttons de Clonard, France around 1600.

In 1599, Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, visited Ballymagir and knighted James Devereux, the then head of the house, in acknowledgement of the connection between the English and Irish families. Tradition had it that Devereux was obliged to sell three townlands to pay for the three days of feasting.

There were several other important branches of the Devereux family in Sallystown, Battlestown, Adamstown, Taghmon, Coolhull, Carrigmannon, The Deeps, Ballyshanndon and Tomhaggard.

Adamstown Castle was built in 1418 by Adam Devereux, after whom Adamstown is named. The castle was rebuilt in 1556 by Sir Nicholas. A stone above the entrance gate bore the family coat of arms and an inscription in Latin which translates 'Pray for the souls of Nicholas Devereux, knight, and of the Lady Catherine Power, his wife, who built this manor house in the year of the Lord, 1556. The stone is still preserved by the Rothwell family in the hall of Adamstown House.

Philip Devereux of Ballymagir purchased Carrigmannon from Thomas Furlong circa 1600 and gave it to his son Robert who was a member of the Supreme council of the Confederation of Kilkenny. His son Colonel James Devereux was M.P. for Enniscorthy in King James's Parliament in 1689. The family remained in Carrigmannon until going to France about the middle of the nineteenth century. Catholic John Devereux of The Deeps was deprived of his estates in the Cromwellian confiscations when they were granted to one of Cromwell's standard bearers named Randall.

Other Devereux landowners at the Cromwellian period included James of Kiltra, John of Tomhaggard; Laurence of Littlegraigne, Colonel John of Mountpill, Edward of Loughnageer, Nicholas of Clonsharragh, Nicholas of Ballyrankin. The Tomhaggard Devereuxs have remained in continuous occupation of their ancestral lands from medieval times, down to the present owner, James Devereux, and his family and have faithfully

preserved Ireland's only surviving Penal days (1691-1760) thatched chapel on their property. The Penal Laws were passed by the Protestant Parliament of Ireland during the reigns of William and Mary, William III, Anne, and George I and II. The declared purpose of this code of laws was to disenfranchise the native Catholic majority, and to entice the colonized Irish to conversion to Protestantism.

The Devereux family was powerful in the military and as landowners, but were also prominent in the clergy. Andrew Devereux, the last Cistercian Abbot of Dunbrody, became the Bishop of Ferns (in Wexford) in 1539, having taken the Oath of Supremacy under Henry VIII. Though he had been schismatically consecrated, he was recognised by Rome after the accession of the Catholic Queen Mary in 1553. He lived at Kilhile Castle and died at Fethard in July, 1566 and is buried in the chancel of the church there. During his reign he granted much of the church's property to his relations. His nephew, John Devereux (son of Nicholas of Ballymagir) was appointed by Queen Elizabeth as the first Protestant Bishop of Ferns on Oct 14 1566. He lived at Adamstown Castle.

The only trace of the Redmonds and Devereux up to 1750 are for the landowning branches which were led by the first-born sons. There is little mention of the descendants of the women and lesser sons, from whom our David and Mary clearly came. David was a fisherman - a major occupation in the early 1700s, and Mary's father William Devereux was in the military and came over with the navy when the town of Halifax was being created. However, after our branch of the family left Ireland, the Redmonds and Devereux continued their positions of power into the 20th century, and since they are about the only influential people I have turned up that are even close to our family, let me tell you about some of the more recently famous Redmonds and Devereux illuminaries.

It is notable that both the main Redmond and Devereux families were able to survive the Cromwell invasions that sought to remove all power from the Catholics - they were able to make the necessary accommodations with the English Protestants in order to hang on to their lands and their lives, and eventually to reclaim their power in the military, politics, business and religion. The French family whose power base was Galway was also able to continue as aristocrats and

landowners through this turbulent period, to become my grandmother's grandparents' landlord in Elphin, Roscommon in 1849.

THE MODERN REDMONDS AND DEVEREUX IN IRELAND

A distinguished Devereux of the nineteenth century was John of Taghmon who became a lieutenant-General in Bolivar's Army fighting for the liberation of South American States under Spanish Rule. John Devereux had figured prominently in the 1798 insurrection, especially at the Battle of New Ross. He afterwards went to France, and Napoleon offered him a General's command in the army he was preparing to invade England. Subject to satisfactory service he was to be given the whole domain of Evereux in Normandy, from which the family took its name, and created a Duke of the Empire. Devereux's sense of liberty obliged him to decline the tempting offer. He then went to South America, returning to England and Ireland to recruit volunteers for service there. He changed his name to D'Evereux.

Redmonds and Devereux both were influential families in the history of the town of Wexford. In the 19th century Devereuxs were the merchant princes of Wexford town. Richard Devereux owned the largest fleet of sailing ships in Ireland and brought the first cargo of Indian Corn to Wexford during the Famine. He amassed a fortune from his shipping and malting business and was a munificent benefactor in the interests of Catholic education and the church. He built and endowed the Convent of Mercy at Summerhill and enabled the Christian Brothers to establish a foundation at Wexford. In recognition of his generosity he was conferred with the Knighthood of St Gregory by Pope Pius IX. He died in 1883.

The family owned numerous barques, brigs and schooners which were employed in the Mediterranean fruit and grain trades and also on coastal and cross channel routes. A number of ships of the Devereux fleet were built in the family's own yards. The first of these was a little wooden schooner, "The Slaney" of ninety tons, which was launched in 1837. In 1846 Richard Devereux bought the Sunderland built schooner 'Vision' of 143 tons and it was with this ship that he entered the Black Sea grain

trade. His boats 'May Queen' 'Saltee' and 'Hantoon' were principally involved in the Canadian timber trade.

The Devereux family also owned a large amount of property, particularly on the Wexford seafront. Most of the buildings along Paul Quay and Lower King Street were theirs and co-incidentally these were later owned by another shipping family, the Staffords. Richard Devereux was a great benefactor of clergy and religious orders and was a strong supporter of education. He introduced a number of teaching orders to Wexford including the Christian Brothers. It is interesting to note that among the subjects taught in their schools were trigonometry and navigation. When Richard Devereux died in 1883 he was worth over a quarter of a million pounds.

The best known Redmonds were the distinguished parliamentarians, notably John Edward Redmond, Leader of the Irish Party in the House of Commons until his death in 1918. He was the last M.P. for New Ross (1885-91) and subsequently for Waterford. He is one of the outstanding figures in Irish history, having united the country after the Parnell split and he succeeded in getting Home Rule for the 32 counties on the statute books in 1912. On the outbreak of the 1914-18 war he launched the recruitment of an Irish army to fight with Britain for the freedom of small nations. He completely lost control of the country with the arrival of Sinn Fein as a force to be reckoned with.

The first of this family in parliament was also John Edward Redmond who represented Wexford borough from 1859 to 1865 when he died. He established the Wexford Dockyard and was responsible for having the Sloblands reclaimed and other important public works. Before he died at The Deeps, where he lived, he said 'My heart is with the town of Wexford. Nothing can extinguish that love but the cold sod of the grave and when that day comes I hope you will pay me the compliment I deserve of saying that I always loved you'. These words are quoted on the Redmond monument in Wexford. Cousin Sharon Redmond has been to Wexford, and had her picture taken at Redmond Square in Wexford, where the Redmond Monument honors John Edward Redmond. His life and political impact are outlined in Wikipedia, and his picture and the plaque and monument in Redmond Square

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Redmond

When they were dispossessed in the Cromwellian confiscations, the Taghmon Devereux settled in Harveystown where they lived for a few generations as ordinary farmers until both parents died in the eighteenth century. After that the priest in Taghmon managed to have the Redmond children apprenticed to business and trades in Wexford town. In the course of time, 'through industry, rectitude and propriety' Walter and John acquired wealth and became proprietors of Redmond's Bank in the Bull Ring and later acquired landed property in various parts of the county. A directory of Wexford in 1832 show the bank named Redmond-Devereux Bank, so here is another example of Redmond and Devereux alliances. The bankers Walter and John Redmond had established the famous bank in the Bull Ring, Wexford, in the 1780s. Walter who lived at Bettyville and Ballytrent, founded the orphanage in the charge of the Sisters of Mercy in Wexford. John, who built, and lived at, Somerton House, was father of the first John E. Redmond, M.P.

The Redmond family were not great ship owners but were involved in land reclamation in Wexford Harbour, and it was they who opened the dockyard at Trinity Street where a number of Wexford vessels were built. Over two thirds of the large Wexford harbor was reclaimed from mud flats (map in paper file .. Wexford Port - A History by Nicholas Rossiter 941.885/W1 U3rn)

The 1798 rebellion was an off-shoot of the French Revolution, which motivated the Irish to rise up against their Protestant masters. A French armada attempted to invade Dublin in 1796, but were beaten back by the English and the weather. The rebels had most success in the south-eastern county of Wexford where they seized control of the county, but a series of bloody defeats at the Battle of New Ross, Battle of Arklow, and the Battle of Bunclody prevented the effective spread of the rebellion beyond the county borders. 20,000 troops eventually poured into Wexford and inflicted defeat at the battle of Vinegar Hill on 21 June. The rebellion was led by the Catholic clergy, and so Redmonds and Devereux who were prominent in the service of the Catholic church were soundly punished.

Father John Redmond of Ballinakill was hanged on Gorey Hill as a suspected sympathizer with the rebels in 1798. Father Ned Redmond, P.P., Ferns (1786-1819) saved Napoleon from drowning when a student

in France. The thatched chapel which he had built in Clologue in 1788 was burned by Yeomen on November 18, 1798.

Rev, William Devereux, parish priest of Piercestown from 1730 to 1771, compiled a catechism for the Diocese of Ferns. He was the Chancellor of the diocese in 1739 and Vicar General. Canon Mark Devereux was Pastor of Bree for 62 years (1774-1836), being succeeded by Canon Philip Devereux who built the present parish church. Archdeacon Peter Devereux, who was parish priest of Kilmore for 43 years (1751-1794), provided in his will for the founding of a catholic seminary in the diocese of Ferns. He lived at Ballyhealy and is buried in Tomhaggard. Rev. James Devereux, a native of Ramsgrange, was parish priest of Piercetown until his death in April 1798 during the Rebellion. He was a former Superior of the House of Missions, Enniscorthy.

A most prominent Redmond woman was Margaret Redmond ([Portrait](#)) (1785-1851) who married John Walsingham Cooke Meredith, and had eight famous sons who became known as the Eight London Merediths. She was a cousin of John Edward Redmond, the first of the famous Irish political dynasty. Seven of them and their cousins were prominent in Canada in Law, Finance, Education and Business, in their home of London, Ontario and in Toronto and Montreal in the mid 19th century.

In law, Sir William Ralph Meredith and Richard Martin Meredith became chief justices for the province of Ontario. Two others were Queen's Counsels, and City solicitor for London, Ontario. A cousin Sir William Collis Meredith was Chief Justice of Quebec. Sir Vincent Meredith was President of the Bank of Montreal, and his younger brother Charles Meredith was President of the Montreal Stock Exchange. Another lawyer brother Thomas Graves Meredith was President of Canada Life Assurance, and John Stanley Meredith was General Manager of Merchant's Bank of Canada. My best friend Michael Haggerty is descended from the Canadian Merediths.

Richard Martin Meredith was founder and first Chancellor of the University of Western Toronto. Sir William Ralph Meredith was a member of parliament and leader of the Ontario Conservative Party, and Edmund Meredith was an alderman and Mayor of London, Ontario. Only five of the brothers married. Sir Vincent Meredith married a daughter of Andrew Allen, Chairmand of the Allan Line and Merchant's Bank. Charles

Meredith married a daughter of Richard B Angus, co-founder of the Canadian Pacific Railway, and Thomas Graves Meredith married a daughter of Hon. Sir John Carling P.C., President of the Carling Brewery. But of the five brothers who married, only three of them had children, and within one generation all of the male descendants of this family were dead.

OUR PIONEERS AND THEIR PLACE IN HISTORY

All of my pioneers that were the first ones to come to Canada did so without leaving any records proving where they came from, so our Redmond family tree begins in Canada. This was largely because they came to Canada from Ireland or Scotland in the 1750s to 1840s when there were few passenger lists, and when the Irish and Scottish parish registers and other records were few and far between. My wife Fran (McKinnon) was more fortunate, as her French ancestors are traceable to their birth places because of the availability on-line of Quebec Catholic parish registers, which I have much enjoyed, mining for her family's history. Her father's Scottish ancestors came in 1822 before reliable records were kept, and my grandmother's Scottish families came in the 1840s, both to Cape Breton. My Redmond men liked to marry Scottish girls, and their families came to Nova Scotia in the 1700s. Let's look at them in historical order, and speculate on how history may have guided their decisions to come to Canada.

LOUIS HOUDE AND NICOLAS GAMACHE - FRAN'S FRENCH PIONEERS

My wife Fran's maternal grandparents were Edmund Picard and Rose Gamache - Edmund's mother Odile Houle died young, her husband Telesphore Houle re-married and moved his family to Rhode Island, leaving Edmund to be raised by Odile's parents Abraham Houle and Angelique Asselin. The pioneer of the Houle family was Louis Houde, and of the Gamache family was Nicolas Gamache. Both came to Canada in the mid 1650s when the King of France Henry II encouraged the colonization of Quebec around the St Lawrence River.

Louis' parents Noel and Anne Lefebvre and Nicolas' parents Nicolas and Michelle Patel had both experienced the ravages of the Thirty Years War (1618-1648), a particularly brutal conflict between Catholics and Protestants in which 20% of the Germanic people died. John Calvin had brought the Protestant movement to France in about 1555. Calvin

diverged from Catholic doctrine in the rejection of papal authority and in the individual's right to interpret scriptures; thus placing the Huguenots, his followers, in conflict with both the Catholic Church and the King of France.

The Huguenot Church grew rapidly. At its first synod in 1559, fifteen churches were represented. Over two thousand churches sent representatives to the synod in 1561. In the beginning, the Huguenots were greatly favored by Francis I because of their stature and their abilities as well as their economic contribution to the country's finances. However, ninety percent of France was Roman Catholic, and the Catholic Church was determined to remain the controlling power. The Huguenots alternated between high favor and outrageous persecution. Inevitably, there were clashes between Roman Catholics and Huguenots, many erupting into the shedding of blood. During the 1560s, the clashes worsened.

Finally, Catherine de' Medici (widow of Henry II, son of Francis I) and the Guise factions, together representing the Crown and the Church, organized a deadly act. Thousands of Huguenots were in Paris celebrating the marriage of Henry of Navarre to Marguerite de Valois on Saint Bartholomew's Day, August 24, 1572. On that day, soldiers and organized mobs fell upon the Huguenots, and thousands of them were slaughtered. Gaspard de Coligny was among the first to fall at the hands of a servant of the Duke de Guise and was chopped to pieces. Pope Gregory XIII had a medal struck off in honor of the event and sent to Catherine and all Catholic prelates.

King Louis XIII began the settlement of Quebec during the war, and many skilled home builders and the ship merchants of La Rochelle, who could carry them to the new world, were Huguenot sympathizers. So he created the "Company of One Hundred Associates" who were given all the land in Quebec and license to all trade except fisheries. They in return would colonize Quebec by providing transportation for all, sustenance for the settlers for the first three years, and enough cleared land for their support. They would govern the settlements through the Catholic church and provide each community with 3 Catholic priests, thus shutting out the Huguenots. They sent 300 colonists per year beginning in 1628 and guaranteeing 4000 by the end of 1643.

The hundred investors signed on and anted up 3000 *livres* each. Before the first group of settlers led by Robert Gifford could made it up the Saint Lawrence River in July of 1628, the British intercepted the French fleet of four ships. War had broken out with England in 1627. King Charles I of England had authorized the seizure of French shipping. David Kirke carried out the British orders. Laden with supplies, provisions and passengers, French Admiral Rocquemont understood his disadvantage -- he was poorly armed, his ships not easily maneuvered. Kirke knew it would be an easy victory. The inevitable clash ensued, Kirke confiscated as much as he could carry on his own fleet of ships, and allowed the passengers to return to France on two ships. Admiral Rocquemont was taken prisoner, to be released later.

The Company of 100 Associates lost 90% of its investment. The project was now on hold. By 1631, the company had to find new investors willing to accept the risks. By 1633, the game was on again. Giffard would gather up his recruits from Normandy and set sail in the spring of 1634 with seventeen tradesmen from the Perche region of France (the Percheron immigration), including Jean Guyon (Dion), Zacharie Cloutier (Nicolas Gamache's father-in-law), and Marin Boucher (Louis Houde's father-in-law), and their families. Between them they populated much of Quebec, and over three quarters of old stock Quebecois are descended from them. Marin Boucher, also a skilled mason, was said to have inherited the great coat of Samuel Champlain, founder of Quebec in 1608, after his death on Christmas day, 1635.

Their interesting stories are well told by Wikipedia (just Google their names). Jean Guyon has been linked to the family trees of Madonna, Celine Dion, Stephane Dion and Camilla, Duchess of Cornwall. Zacharie Clouthier is the most prolific, having 10,850 French Canadian descendants by 1800. He has been linked to Madonna, Camilla Duchess of Cornwall, Chelsea Clinton, Hillary Rodham Clinton, Celine Dion, the Dionne quintuplets, Robert Goulet, Angelina Jolie, Jack Kerouac, Beyonce Knowles, Avril Lavigne, Alanis Morissette, Jack Kerouac, and Prime Minister Louis St Laurent.

Because he had 14 children, Marin has several hundred thousand descendants living today. Some of the more famous people who trace back to him include Madonna, Celine Dion, Angelina Jolie and Jack Kerouac. Because I was intrigued by this, I began researching the

descendants of Louis Houde, and had major fun in finding over 8,000 descendants born before 1800. My major sources were the free family trees in Rootsweb, the Drouin Catholic parish registers available online through Family Search (the Mormons), and the PRDH (an online compilation of all Quebec Catholics registers up to 1800, researched in the early 1800s, and maintained by the University of Montreal). This and my similar research into the descendants of Nicolas Gamache is available in my family trees at

<http://genealogy.tim-ash.com/getperson.php?personID=I197&tree=Houde>

and

<http://genealogy.tim-ash.com/getperson.php?personID=I204&tree=Gamache>

The Thirty Years War took its toll on France, and together with pestilence and crops destroyed by war left adventurous young men motivated for risk and adventure. By 1647 when Quebec had a population of 132 settlers, the Company of 100 Associates funded the recruitment of skilled builders, which found fertile ground in the Perche, near Chartres, half-way between Paris and the Normandy coast. Louis Houde, a stone mason; Nicolas Gamache and family, Julien Fortin and Michel Lemay & Francois Garnier whose children were to inter-marry with the Houde family were all part of the Percheron Immigration of 1647.

Louis Houde came from Manou, near Chartres. He signed on for a three year contract to work for recruiter Lord Noel Jucherau building houses. He sailed from La Rochelle on 6 June 1647 on the ship "La Marguerite" which weighed 70 tons, captained by Marsolet. This is known because just a few miles from their destination Tadousac, a sailor (possibly an immigrant) had drunk too much to counter the effects of sea sickness, and threw himself overboard. Louis was chosen to be one of the five witnesses to sign a legal document. Shortly after his arrival, the government passed a law forbidding Huguenots to settle in New France.

After fulfilling his obligations as a stone mason, he became a successful land developer, buying properties in Sillery, upper Quebec near Grand-

Allee now, and finally in Chateau Richer next to Marin Boucher's property, flipping his properties for much profit. There he was to marry Madeleine Boucher, Marin's thirteen year old daughter, at her father's home in 1655. By 1658 they settled on land on l'sle d'Orleans, a 30 km long island just east of Quebec city, and nearby across the St Lawrence from Chateau Richer. Their land had a frontage of four arpents (about 767 feet) along the river and extending into the island. The Houde family was to have thirteen of their fourteen children on this 17 acre farm. The church encouraged settlers to have large families, and both Louis and most of his children were happy to oblige.

For most of the history of French Canada, land was held by "Seigneurs" or land-lords who received rents from those who held leases. These were bought, sold and passed to heirs (including wives), much like deeds. The seigneurial system was ideal for settlement during the pioneer period. The seigneuries were subdivided into narrow lots extending back from the banks of the river; the river frontage afforded each lot access to transportation facilities. The tenant, or censitaire, paid taxes to the seigneur in the form of farm products, and the seigneur in turn provided such facilities as mills. Louis supported his family by clearing his land and farming it, while occasionally engaging in his brick-laying trade.

Seventeenth century homes can still be seen in the Province of Quebec. They are tributes to the past, and to the builders who erected them sound and durable. Louis Houde was one of these builders In this new country. Work was not lacking for a builder, and neither were building materials. The large forests furnished all the wood necessary to construct the homes. Pine, fir and oaks were the trees of choice. Granite stones were abundant and were excellent building stones, and blue slate assured quality roofs. Louis Houde learned his trade in France, but it soon became evident that construction methods in France were different from those in Canada. In Canada, they had to contend with frost, snow, and glacial winds from the Laurentians. He and his fellow builders adopted ingenious and efficient methods that resulted in a domestic architecture that became typically regional. The builder/bricklayers constructed their homes using simple plans and were almost always identical. The "typical home" included a large living room.

Nicolas Gamache arrived in Quebec around 1751, coming as a 12 year-old with his father Nicolas, sister Genevieve and half-brother Jacques, who was to purchase a property from Louis Houde. Genevieve married one of the 17 Percheron migrants Julien Fortin when she was sixteen - near to Beauport across the river from the eastern tip of L'Isle d'Orleans. In 1670 Julien gave a property to Nicolas, who traded it for a four arpent wide property near la Grande Riviere.

Soon the fortunes of Nicolas Gamache improved, as he and Louis Gagne were awarded a seigneurie at Cap St Ignace by the new Governor Jean Talon to honor them for services (probably fighting the Iroquois menace) performed for the first governor of New France from 1665-1672 Daniel de Remy, Sieur de Courcelles. This land was downstream from Quebec on the south shore of the St Lawrence. Genevieve de Chavigny, widow of Charles Amyot, was granted a neighboring 280 arpents of land planted in trees, doubling the size of Nicolas' seigneurie. He tried to have this land added to his seigneurie, but in 1693 his case was dismissed from court, and he had to pay rent.

In autumn 1676 he married his sixteen year old sweetheart Elisabeth-Ursule Cloutier in Chateau Richer, on the estate of her grandfather Zacharie Cloutier. They were to have ten children and many descendants before the end of the century. In 2 March 1683 he fulfilled his seigneurial duty by granting land for the building of a church at Cap Saint-Ignace. Nicolas and Elisabeth Ursule didn't quite make it to the new century, passing away within days of each other in October 1699. Several of their children married into the large family of Louis Guyon, the mason who came with Louis Houde to build the town of Quebec. The Gamache clan stayed close to home and multiplied, but not many of his descendants are named Gamache because they had a strong tendency to produce daughters.

Nicolas' sister Genevieve married another pioneer Julien Fortin II dit Bellefontaine on 11 Nov 1652 in Saint-Joachim de Montmorency at Cap Tourmente, Quebec. He has a section in "Our French Canadian Ancestors" by Thomas J Laforest Vol I pp 91-99, from which I took excerpts about his life. Doctor Robert Giffard, proprietor of the Seigneurie of Beauport in New France, returned to France for a visit in 1634 and stayed at the celebrated Inn of Cheval Blanc. It so happened that this hostelry was owned by Gervaise Lavoye, the maternal

grandfather of Julien. Our future colonist was about thirteen years old, and fascinated with the stories told by Seigneur Giffard about the life in Canada. Giffard went back to Canada, but returned to France in 1650 on a recruiting mission. As a result, many of the local citizens of Perche decided to emigrate in company with the Seigneur, Julien included. The 29 year old Julien took himself to the port of Dieppe on Normandie, embarked for New France, and spent three long months at sea because of heavy winds. The ship finally arrived at Quebec by the end of the summer of 1650.

Perhaps he had some money set aside, or some economic resources on which he could draw, because he bought a prime piece of waterfront property just in front of Sainte-Anne-de-Beaupre on 26 December 1650; a fortuitous Christmas present to himself. He sold it to Robert Caron on 2 March 1654 for the sum of 55 livres. On 23 August 1657, Julien became part owner of both the Seigneurie of Beauport and the Ile d'Orleans. He generously donated a small wooden house and 50 livres to help build the church at Chateau-Richer, and the following year, 6 October 1661, he testified by deposition before the court on the subject of the Iroquois ravages: the sacking of the farms of Jean Picard, the widow Caron, and Claude Bouchard, as well as the massacre of six people, among whom was Louis Guimond(5). In 11 Nov 1652, Julien married seventeen year old Genevieve Gamache, and they had eight boys and four girls, one just about every 23 months until June 1677.

We note with interest, that just as Our Ancestor Julien lived to an age of about 70, in 1689, his father Julien senior was alive in France for most of this time having survived until 30 January 1679. What news did he receive from his legacy to New France? Genevieve Gamache continued to live from the inheritance of her late husband, but she would end her days in the home of her son Charles at l'Islet, not far from the fief of her brother Nicholas Gamache dit Lamarre. She was buried at Notre Dame de Bonsecours, at l'Islet on 5 November 1709.

Most descendants of Nicolas Gamache remained near the lands of Nicolas' seigneurie in L'Islet, which is on the south shore of the St Laurence, about thirty miles east of Quebec city. There are thousands of his descendants still living there today. The family of my wife Fran's grandmother Rose Gamache migrated only recently to Alberta - her grandfather David Gamache lived his whole life in L'Islet.

Meanwhile, back to Louis Houde and his growing family - early in the twenty years his family lived on Ile d'Orleans where there was much danger from the Iroquois. Marin Boucher was a witness to the burning of a neighbour's home and the killing of the family of six in 1760. The town of Sillery was created in an attempt to defend neighboring land from the Iroquois. Michel Rognon, whose son Guillaume was to marry Louis Houde's youngest daughter Angelique, was in the military Carignan-Salieres regiment. He was recruited in Paris, and he and 800 other soldiers embarked on a huge 1200 ton naval vessel for a voyage to Cayenne in South America to recapture it from the Dutch. After returning to La Rochelle, they set sail for Quebec, spending four months in Guadeloupe, and arriving in Quebec 23 Jun 1665. Their mission was to force the Iroquois into submission to the King of France. Imagine their consternation when they had to spend the harsh winter at Beauport on Ile D'Orleans!

On September 14, 1666 an expedition comprising 700 soldiers and 400 inhabitants (probably including Nicolas Gamache) and one hundred native allies, invaded the Mohawk country. Warned, the Mohawks retired and the ships burned four villages and returned to Quebec Nov. 5, 1666. The company wintered at Ile D'Orleans, and after the restoration of peace, the combatants were offered incentives (food for a year plus perks) to stay in Quebec. Michel stayed, but of the 1200 soldiers sent from France, 250 died, 400 stayed and the rest returned to France.

Unlike Louis Houde and Nicolas Gamache, who were lucky enough to find young daughters of the earlier group of settlers who supported Champlain's settlement, Michel and most of his young male settlers, was unable to find a local bride. Riding to the rescue was King Louis XIV, who, realizing that the New France settlements couldn't thrive without making families, recruited the "Filles de Roi" (King's daughters) - some from aristocratic families, but mainly from healthy young farm women, capable of having many children and shouldering the heavy work of clearing forest land and helping their man to build a farm. He provided transportation to Quebec, a dowry of clothes and household items, and passage home if the new life wasn't to their liking.

Needless to say, these young women were in great demand, most marrying within a week of their arrival in Quebec. They were in fact very healthy, and raised large families, often out-living several husbands.

Michel married Marguerite Main in 1670 in Quebec City - unlike the Percheron men, the fille de roi came from all over France. Marguerite was from St Vivien, near Rouen in Normandie. She outlived Michel and married again only two months after his death.

Meanwhile, the Houde family had out-grown its land on Ile D'Orleans - Louis had a tendency to produce sons, and he had to provide land for nine sons. So he purchased from the Ursulines a huge Seigneurie on the south shore of the St Laurence at Lotbiniere, about 30 miles west of Quebec City. His eldest son had married Anne Rouleau dit Sanssoucy, daughter of another farmer on Isle D'Orleans, and raised his family on his father's land. His younger sons received land in the Lotbiniere region, which was to become Ste Croix and St Antoine de Tilly. As Seigneur, he was able to grant land to all his sons and some son-in-laws.

In France and Quebec it was common for men to adopt a "dit" (family aka) names indicative of where they came from or what they did. Three of the Houde sons did so - Jacques chose "Desruisseaux" to reflect the small ravines of the streams that watered their land; Louis Jr lived facing the cliffs of the river, which people began to call "Houde des Roches", and the dit name Desrochers was attached to his descendants. Land given to eleventh child Joseph was embellished with remarkable groves of maple and oaks. People named it "Houde des Belles Feuilles" (beautiful trees), so his dit name became Bellefeuille.

The spouses of Louie's children were children of some other interesting pioneers - one was Michel Lemay who left his country for Canada in 1653. The following extract is from "Our French-Canadian Ancestors" Vol II by Thomas J. Laforest.

"Michel Lemay no longer suffered from wander-lust. Now he stayed home to engage in his favorite pastime--eel fishing. This sport started in 1666 as a means of earning some extra money. At first he fished with nets off the Pointe-Saint-Croix. Later, when the sport became a business, he would build weirs, to take advantage of the tidal ebb and flood, in order to trap the wrigley creatures. It was not by chance that, when Seigneur Chartier offered Michel a concession in Lotbiniere, he included fishing rights in the river in exchange for "sixteenth part of his catch, salted and conditioned." In 1722, Bacqueville de la Potherie wrote that on a single tide one could land as many as 3000 eels. Now that is good

fishing indeed! Lemay would put the fish in holding tanks, then salt them down in barrels of 500 eels each. In a good season, the catch would amount to 60-70,000 eels. This "Fruit of the Sea" was sold for 25 to 30 livres a barrel. In 1679, Jean Lemoyne delivered to the Lemay family, "a windmill with all the parts, ready to grind wheat into flour". Price: 80 livres or 3 livres per hundred eels."

The eels would be shipped back to France, where they were considered a gourmet dish, and were very valuable.

Larry Desaire has the following note about his death:

Sometime in December 1684 or January, he failed to come home. He probably drowned in the St. Laurence River while fishing. On 10 February 1685, Michelle Quinville, his second wife, signed a document at Quebec declaring herself a widow.

Louise Houde married Michel's son Charles, and Louis Marie Houde married his daughter Madeleine.

Eldest son Jean's wife Anne was the daughter of Gabriel Rouleau, who came from near Chartres in France in 1652 and had a farm on Ile d'Orleans from 1652 to 1673, with oxen, a cow, 5 pigs, and grew wheat. Two of her siblings died in a house fire.

Etienne Denevers came from Espinay, Champagne, France to Trois Rivieres, then fled the Iroquois to the Jesuit built town Sillery for protection against the Indians. He also fished for eels. His daughter Anne Catherine married Louis&Madeleine's son Gervais Houde, his grand-daughter Elisabeth Ursule married Fran's ancestor Etienne, Louis' youngest son. Etienne's family lived across the St Lawrence from Lotbiniere.

Louis enjoyed a long healthy life, living into his nineties. He donated the land for the original Ste Croix church on the banks of the St Lawrence, which had to be moved in 1722. Because the earlier records are lost, the date of his death is uncertain - some saying he lived to 95, dying in 1712, others claiming his will was proved in 1710. One source says that Madeleine survived her husband, and lived into her nineties, while another gives her death date at 28 Oct 1709 at Ste Croix. In any case, by the time Louis passed away he had 75 grandchildren, of whom 31 were

grandsons with the surname Houde. I have collected a total of 8161 descendants of Louis Houde born before 1800, and 1695 descendants of Nicolas Gamache.

LOUIS HOUDE DESCENDANTS - FAMOUS AND INFAMOUS

Louis Houde has an organization of his descendants, called Descendants of Louis Houde & Madeleine Boucher and a website DLHMB and magazine Le Manousien. They collect the lines from everyone who joins back to Louis Houde, and now have accumulated a family tree with 125,000 descendants (which I have purchased)- and they do not have Fran's 1000 descendants of Martin Houle b. 1782, or the hundreds of descendants of Metis pioneer Antoine Houle. There have been many books written about the Houde/Houle family - (Houle), which is available as a free ebook online at the Family History Library

<https://familysearch.org/search/catalog/522289?availability=Family%20History%20Library>

(The link is to "Louis Houde et sa descendance" by Hubert A Houle in French&English) 929.271 H812). You may have to go to a local Mormon family history library to see it - it lists all of the Houle/Houde descendants alphabetically by first names. The best book (also available online at the Family History Library) is

<https://familysearch.org/eng/library/fhlcatalog/supermainframeset.asp?display=titledetails&titleno=154187&disp=French+migration+to+North+America+1600%2>.

The link is to "French Migration to North America = Emigration Francaise en Amerique du Nord" by Jean Louis Houde - this book is in French and English on opposing pages, and is available at the BC Genealogy Society Walter Draycott Library in Surrey BC. Other books are available through the DLHMB web-site.

The stories of the other pioneers mentioned above have been found from the 30 volume set of books "Our French-Canadian Ancestors" by THOMAS J. LAFOREST and by searching their names, followed by Quebec history, online (often from Wikipedia).

CAMILLIEN HOUDE

He is the famous one - Camillien was a Quebec politician, and four times mayor of Montreal. He was an exceedingly popular mayor just before World War II, and when the Quebecois resisted being conscripted to fight for Britain in the war, Camillien led the anti-conscription movement in Quebec. On 2 August 1940, Houde publicly urged the men of Quebec to ignore the national registration measure introduced by the federal government. Three days later he was placed under arrest by the Royal Canadian Mounted Police on charges of sedition, and was then confined without trial in internment camps in Petawawa, Ontario and Minto, New Brunswick until 1944. Upon his release on 18 August 1944, he was greeted by a cheering crowd of 50,000 Montrealers, and won back his job as Montreal mayor in 1944's civic election.

He is related to Louis Houde by (Victorie>Pierre>Gregoire>Louis>Pierre Louis>Jean Baptiste>Louis Marie>Louis Houde), which makes him a seventh cousin thrice removed of my wife Fran.

LOUIS DAVID RIEL

Yes, the famous leader of the Metis Rebellion in 1847 was also a descendant of Louis Houde through his father, ie. by (Louis Riel> Jean Baptiste Riel III>Antoinette Henault>Genevieve Charon>Marie Jeanne Houde>Jean>Jean Baptiste>Louis Houde), making him a seventh cousin four times removed of my wife Fran. His grandmother Antoinette Henault (the Houde descendant) lived in Berthier-en-haut where she married Louis Riel's grandfather Jean Baptiste Riel Jr. His eldest son, also named Jean Baptiste, was the pioneer "voyageur" who moved to the

prairies and married Marguerite Boucher, whose father was a fur trader who married a Dene Aboriginal woman. Marguerite was called in French, "Metisse". This French word meant a woman of mixed ancestry. She was part Aboriginal and part non-Aboriginal. Since his mother was part Aboriginal, so was Louis Riel Sr.

Louis Riel Sr. moved to Red River Settlement and married Julie Lagimodiere. He was a leader in the community. He helped Red River traders to get free trade and become freemen. He was also known as the "miller of the Seine" because he had built a mill on the Seine River for grinding wheat into flour. The Seine River flows through St. Boniface into the Red River.

Louis' mother was Julie Lagimodiere. Her father was Jean Baptiste Lagimodiere. He was a FREEMAN, that is, a fur trader who did not work for any fur company. Jean married Marie-Anne Gaboury in Quebec and brought his new wife to the North West where they had their family. In the settlement the Lagimodieres lived like the rest of the freemen and their Aboriginal wives and children.

Metis families are great story tellers. They used a language called Michif (a mixture of French and Cree). They loved to tell stories about their brave leaders. Louis Riel's grandmother, Marie-Anne Gaboury, was a very good story teller. Louis would have heard her tell many stories about their family's past. This kind of story telling is called "oral history". It is told from one generation to the next. Usually, these stories are not written down but Marie-Anne's stories were recorded by a priest whose name was L'Abbe Dugast. She was one of the first Quebecois women to accompany their husband along the gruelling portage route up the Ottawa River and across the rivers and lakes to Lake Superior. Her fascinating story is told in the book "Marie-Anne - the Extraordinary Life of Louis Riel's Grandmother", by Maggie Siggins.

I leave you to read his "Wiki" for a detailed account of Louis Riel Jr's life. Very briefly, he was educated by the church, who sent him to university in Montreal in the hopes he would become a priest. After a failed love affair there, he returned to the St Boniface and the Red River settlements and became a leader of the Metis people in their battle with the new federal government to claim ownership of their land. After negotiations broke down, Riel formed a local government, and subsequently was

elected to Parliament. However, his opponents managed to have him exiled to the US, and he could never take up his seat. He was to become a US citizen, and went through a period of mental illness in Montana. He married Marguerite Monet *dit* Bellehumeur, a young Métis, "in the fashion of the country" on 28 April, 1881, an arrangement that was solemnized on 9 March 1882. They were to have three children: Jean-Louis (1882–1908); Marie-Angélique (1883–1897); and a boy who was born and died on 21 October 1885, less than one month before Riel was hanged. In 1884 he returned to lead the Northwest Rebellion, was captured, and despite pleas for clemency by his Quebec supporters, he was sentenced to hang in Regina on 17 Nov 1885 for treason. Recently his image has improved, and he is known as the founder of Manitoba and a brave leader of Metis rebellion - streets are named after him, and several controversial bills have been proposed (but not passed) to revoke his conviction and celebrate a Louis Riel day as a Canadian holiday.

So he can be envisioned as both famous and infamous.

MARIE ANNE HOUDE - THE MURDERER

Marie Anne Houde was convicted for the murder of her step-daughter Aurore Gagnon on Feb 12, 1920. She and her husband were arrested after her funeral - he was convicted of manslaughter, and she was sentenced to hang on Oct 1 1920, a sentence which was later changed to life in prison. The trial was attended by hundreds as her step-daughter Jeanne and son Gerard testified to the horrible child abuse - poisoning, 53 stab wounds, hospital stays etc. The trial transcript is online (search for "roi contre marie anne houde"), including testimony of her alcoholic husband Telesphore Gagnon, father Treffle Houde and brother Willie.

Telesphore had five children by his first wife Louise Caron, who he had committed to Beauport Asylum because she had TB. Marie Anne moved in immediately (she was the widow of Telesphore's cousin Napoleon Gagnon), and they were married a week after Louise Caron's death in 1918. She had a still-born birth a few months later, and one child, and she was pregnant during her trial, and had twins at the St Vincent de Paul prison Creche in Laval on Jan 12 1921. She was the first woman in Canada to be sentenced to hang, but her sentence was commuted to life

imprisonment when her pregnancy was discovered. Her husband claimed that she only went crazy with the kids when she was pregnant, and at those times he stayed out of her way.

She was moved to Kingston Penitentiary where she stayed until she was released because of her terminal breast cancer. Her mental illness was so unusual that it was the subject of several psychiatric papers based on studying her while she was in jail. Her victim embodied the most horrible of child abuses, and in fact "Aurore" became synonymous with child abuse in the Quebec vernacular, and her case is included in the training of all Quebec social workers.

Her story and that of her victim Aurora Gagnon were the subject of a famous play "Aurore l'enfant martyre" in 1921, and expanded to five acts in 1925. There was also published a popular book - a novel by Robert DeBeaujoulais : "La petite martyre victims de la maratre: roman sensationnel (The little martyr, victim of her stepmother; a sensational novel)". This was followed decades later by two more novels and an account of her stay in the Kingston Pen Psychiatric Ward. In 2005 there was a film account "Aurore" by Luc Dionne, and an interpretation center was opened in Fortierville in 2004.

So I think she qualifies as "Infamous". Her ancestry is as follows: (Pierre Trefle Houde > Francois Xavier Houde > Joseph Houde > Joseph Houde > Pierre Charles Houde > Charles Houde > Jacques Houde > Louis Houde - which makes her an eighth cousin twice removed to my wife Fran.

DAVID REDMOND AND MARY DEVEREAUX IN HALIFAX NS

David and Mary are the pioneers for my Canadian Redmond family, who were to live in the St Margaret's Bay area just south of Halifax for several generations. They were Irish Catholics, but the family came to be split into our branch, who married Scottish women, became Protestant, and lived in St. Margaret's Bay; and the Catholic branch, who remained in the area where David's descendants were to inherit his land in Prospect and Shad Bay, on the Atlantic coast just north of the mouth of St Margaret's Bay. Their stories and geographies will be explored later on, but first I take you through the interesting Nova Scotia history that enveloped

David Redmond and his friend John Umlah, as I tried so hard to figure out where David came from, and how he got here.

David Redmond was a fisherman in Nova Scotia, living mainly in the town of Prospect, on the Atlantic, about 20 miles around the coastline from Halifax. There are only a few things I actually know about him for sure. His marriage to Mary Devereux was recorded in St Paul's Anglican Church in Halifax on 20 Jan 1766, by a marriage contract. Previously he had signed a joint marriage bond pledging 100 pounds to the Nova Scotia Governor Montagu Wilmot Esq. with Timothy Kelly, who were pledging to marry together, with Timothy marrying Sarah Croucher.

They had five children Thomas (Bap.1770), Margaret (Bap. 1770), Catherine (1773), Ann (1777-1877), and Rebecca (1781). Mary died shortly after Rebecca was born, on 17 Jan 1781, in St Margaret's Bay. David remarried, to Judith Moser, a widow, on 7 Dec 1784 in Halifax County (probably Prospect), recorded in St Paul's Halifax. She passed away in Petite Riviere, Lunenburg county on 18 May 1791 at the age of 37. At this time David Redmond was living in Prospect, and was on the 1791 poll tax census there. By this time he occupied Redmond Island, off the end of the peninsula of Prospect, on a land grant, and apparently shared a land grant in the Shad Bay area with his brother? cousin? father? William Redmond.

It is also possible that he lived on land willed to his wife by her father Jacob Moser

" Lunenburg County Deeds, Vol #3, #488: Jacob Moser to Mathew Moser and John Seelig in trust for his sister Judith Redman written 19 June 1787, registered 21 June 1787... I jacob Moser of Lunenburg do, give, grant to my brither Matthew Moser and John Seelig, yeoman, 3 town lots of Chester, # 171, # 175, and #178 in trust for my sister Judith Redman ...at her decease, for her husband David Redman".

We also know that David and Judith were witnesses/godparents in the St Stephen's parish register in Chester near Kingsburg where Judith was born and her original family lived - " September 22nd. Baptized David, son of Matthew and Catharine Moser. Witness, David Redman and Wife Judith. Born 19th September" taken from [Lunenburg BMD Don Shankel](#). Matthew was Judith's brother.

In order to speculate further about David's life and death, it is necessary to understand the historical backdrop against which his life progressed. I have had fun speculating on how and why he came to Canada, but have never been able to prove where he came from or where he died. Perhaps if I keep trying, someday I will know more. In the mean-time, it has been fun to identify his friends and their history together.

He met his friend John Umlah, who had emigrated from Scotland to Philadelphia, Pa. in 1854, and found his way to Nova Scotia with the British army recruited there. They enjoyed some mischief during the American war when an american privateer ship, which was causing havoc by raiding the small towns loyal to the British. When it was left unattended, David and John commandeered it and hid it in a remote cove, after stripping it of all its brass fittings. David and John's children inter-married - Thomas Redmond married Nancy Umlah, and John Umlah married Margaret Redmond. Thus John Umlah is also one of our family's pioneers.

FISHING AND NEWFOUNDLAND

First, consider the fishing industry and the Grand Banks cod fishery. Since the thirteenth century Europeans have been commuting across the Atlantic Ocean some 1500 miles to fish in the amazing cod fishery in the Grand Banks of Newfoundland. The main demand for cod was from the Mediterranean countries of Spain and Portugal - Basque fishermen were the first to make the long journey.

In Irish, Newfoundland is called Talamh an Éisc, Land of the Fish. The term Fishing Ground, however, may better capture the spirit of the Gaelic. It was the teeming shoals of codfish on the Grand Banks that first drew the Irish here, as fishing skippers or seasonal workers, during the 16th and 17th Centuries. Some of them became permanent settlers, whose descendants now account for an estimated fifty percent of Newfoundland's population.

As early as 1536, the ship Mighel (Michael) of Kinsale is recorded returning to her home port in Co. Cork with consignments of Newfoundland fish and cod liver oil. A further hint of what one scholar

has termed "a diaspora of Irish fishermen" dates from 1608, when Patrick Brannock, an expatriate Waterford mariner, was reported to sail yearly to Newfoundland from his base in the French port of Bayonne. But codfish were not Newfoundland's only attraction. In 1662, an Irish trapper and some Indian companions were reported poaching beaver, whose ownership lay very much in the eye of the beholder.

At first, the Irish were seasonal migrants. English fishing vessels en route to the Grand Banks called at Waterford, Wexford and New Ross to buy provisions and hire laborers for a "Newfoundland season" of two summers and a winter. Although female servants were taken on from an early date, most workers were single men known in the trade as youngsters. In 1776, a visitor to Waterford reported three to five thousand Irish passengers leaving for Newfoundland each spring aboard sixty to eighty ships.

Few had previous experience as sailors or fishermen. Many found employment on shore, cleaning and salting the cod on purpose-built piers called stages, and then drying the catch in the sun and air on flakes, elevated wooden platforms built on poles and spread with spruce boughs just strong enough to support those--often women and children--laying out the fish.

Over time, migrants became emigrants. Some stayed by choice. Others, with no money saved for the passage home, were left stranded by fishing fleets returning in the autumn. Even so, by 1800 fewer than 10,000 Irish were permanently settled in Newfoundland. Lying some 1800 miles to the west of Ireland, Newfoundland is the only place outside Europe with its own distinctive name in the Irish language. It has been described, with little fear of contradiction, as the most Irish place in the world outside of Ireland. To this beautiful yet forbidding land, a third again as big as Ireland itself, the Irish brought their surnames and place names, their Gaelic games and language, their folklore, music and religion. According to Irish folk lore, an immigrant hurler frustrated by the lack of Gaelic games set a boll on the Newfoundland ice, and with a poc (blow) of his Caman (hurley stick), earned and unacknowledged place in the evolution of ice hockey. In 1800 there were more Irish Gaelic speakers than English in Newfoundland.

From the earliest years, Newfoundland also served many Irish immigrants as a way station or stepping-stone to the North American mainland. During the second half of the 18th Century, a steady trickle of Newfoundlanders—as many as 1,500 in some years, left for the milder winters and better opportunities of New England.

Others spent time in the mainland Canadian provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick before settling in Massachusetts, Maine, Rhode Island or Connecticut. The terms “two-boater” and “three-boater” were eventually coined to describe Irish-American families whose meandering migratory paths to the United States had begun with a sea voyage from Ireland to Newfoundland.

Most of the information above has been taken from irishdiaspora.net and its ebook, which gives references for most of the above narrative.

One of my theories is that David Redmond came to Canada as one of the "youngsters" working on the provisioning ships. Many of these migrant workers were hired from within forty miles of Waterton, in Wexford, the Redmond ancestral home. The Redmonds and Devereux were among the shipowners and bankers in Wexford who made their living from businesses bringing supplies to remote places. By the seventeenth century, Waterford and Wexford in SE Ireland had become the major provisioning centers for English and Welsh fishing fleets preparing for the long trip across the ocean.

The Devereux family was active in the 1700s in the shipbuilding industry in Wexford, and owned major shippers to the Black Sea and other Mediterranean destinations. Major businesses thrived in Waterford, especially, which made several trips to Newfoundland bringing provisions for the fishing fleets.

David was definitely a fisherman, and he had a stage and flakes on the island that was named after him in Prospect. These he used to dry his fish and prepare them for export to Jamaica. Especially during the American Revolution, when all US trade to Jamaica was intercepted, Halifax became a major port for exporting fish to Jamaica, and importing Jamaican rum - which would have been attractive to David.

Prospect NS where he lived and fished was almost entirely Catholic fishermen from County Wexford, and in the 1791 poll tax census of the town, almost all of the names were Irish, from Wexford. In 1794 the first Catholic Church in the area was built in Prospect - Our Lady of Mount Carmel Church. Before that date, it was illegal to have a Catholic church in Nova Scotia, which is why most of the early Prospect marriages were by marriage bond, and were recorded in the St Paul's Anglican parish register in Halifax, probably by a travelling priest who covered the coastal communities of Halifax County.

There is also a Newfoundland connection, as it seems that David was friendly with two Newfies - James Croucher and William Coolen. There was a John Crowcher family in the 1753 Newfoundland census in Trinity Bay - English Harbour. In early Prospect maps around 1783, David Redman is shown to have claimed Redmond Island, where he had his own stage and plakes, and the adjoining point of land at the tip of Upper Prospect ([Prospect Genealogical Website](#)). (if this link doesn't work, try Googling "Prospect NS genealogy") The occupant of this point of land was William Coulen, whose son William F Coolen was later to marry David's granddaughter Mary Redmond.

Moreover in the 1791 census of St Margaret's Bay, William Coolen is working as a day laborer for James Croucher, and both of them are listed as "Newfoundland Irish". James' land grant application said that he moved from Newfoundland in 1755, and in 1766 his sister Sarah Croucher married Timothy Kelly on the same date and with the same marriage bond as David Redmond and Mary Devereux. So it is clear that they were all friends, and probably had spent some time in Newfoundland together.

Another possibility is that David Redmond is related to William Redman, who came over to Halifax on the Cornwallis ship the Wilmington with his wife, leaving from Dover. There was also a William Redmund who married Ruth Briggs on 25 Dec 1750 (St Paul's baptisms). More than a third of the Cornwallis ship passengers left after the first Halifax winter to go to the New England states, including quite a few army deserters - enough that the British army set up a check post on the main road south from Halifax. If William was related to David, and joined the British army in New England, that may explain how David and William ended up with land on Redmond Island and Shad Bay. There is a family rumour that

William Redmond was a deserter, among those escaping from Halifax to New England.

THE FOUNDING OF HALIFAX AND LUNENBURG

In the 1750s there was major conflict between the French and English both in Nova Scotia, North America and in Europe. The French had regained control of the Fortress of Louisbourg as collateral damage from another European war, by the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748, and the French in North America had successfully defended the Mississippi valley against English expansion from western Pennsylvania and Ohio. The English decided it was necessary to establish the port of Halifax as an English settlement to provide a counter-weight to the larger Acadian French population, and to provide a naval base for the military.

Given the assignment was Edward Cornwallis from an illustrious aristocratic English family which includes members of the House of Lords, military and church leaders. In fact his nephew General Charles Cornwallis was the British general who was to be defeated by George Washington in New York, 25 years later. He was charged with transporting 2600 settlers to Halifax and building a settlement with fortifications. There was only one death during the passage due to careful preparations, good ventilation and good luck, a remarkable feat when Transatlantic expeditions regularly lost large numbers to disease. After delivering the settlers and beginning the allotment of land within the town, Cornwallis took his ship the "Sphinx" to evacuate General Hopson and the English settlers from Louisbourg, which was being turned over to the French.

The British took a very different path to settling this colony than did the French a hundred years earlier. The advertisement was almost entirely aimed at retired members of the armed forces, and many of the settlers were listed as "mariners". Only as an after-thought were trades people and "other artificers necessary in building or husbandry, not being private soldiers or seamen" offered similar land grants and guarantees of a year's care and feeding. When harassment by the local Mi'kmaq Indians, who were allies of the French, prevented allotting land outside the fortifications, and with a harsh winter with insufficient time to

prepare, it is not surprising that more than half of the settlers left Halifax within the first year, many for better fortunes in New England.

Human settlement of present day Nova Scotia dates back to the end of the last Ice Age, approximately 13,000 years ago, when groups of hunter gatherers moved into the area to hunt caribou. Oral tradition identifies these early settlers as the forefathers of the Mi'kmaq people, who occupied a territory stretching from the Gaspé Peninsula to Maine. The Mi'kmaq did not establish permanent settlements, but moved in seasonal rounds from coastal regions in the summer where they fished and hunted, to inland areas in the winter where they hunted game such as moose, caribou, muskrat and bear. One coastal area used by the Mi'kmaq was Jipugtug, later Anglicised as Chebucto, which meant "the biggest harbour." The Mi'kmaq were prosperous and greatly impressed early Europeans.

William Devereux came to Halifax on the "Wilmington", and was listed as a "private man" of the 1st Regiment Foot Guards (probably retired Army), with wife, son and two daughters. He was probably Mary's father, and is listed as no longer being on the "victualling list" for feeding by the government in 1750. There were also two "Redmans" - Michael Redman was a single mariner from Grafton, but William Redmond came on the "Wilmington", the same ship as the Devereux family, with his wife, from Dover, and was a "mariner". Dover was a major provisioning port for the Royal Navy, making most of the bread products used on the ships.

William too was listed among the pioneers who had apparently abandoned Halifax in the first year - perhaps this was David Redman's brother (or father?) who was rumoured to have deserted to New England. This was such a problem for the British that they had stationed soldiers on the only route leading south from Halifax to look for deserters. With the restrictions the British had put on the Irish (they weren't allowed to own land or boats, or take boats to England), joining the British military or working on the fishing fleet were the only methods available to the Irish to get to the New World. There was a William Redmund who married Ruth Spriggs on 25 Dec 1750 - perhaps they had lied about being married on the ship registration, or maybe William's wife didn't survive the first winter?

Governor Cornwallis tried his best to negotiate arrangements with the Mi'kmacs, but in 1752 the colonists were still trapped inside the newly built fortifications, and large numbers of people were still receiving their victuals, at great cost to the British government. It had proven too difficult to get the often penniless settlers out into the surrounding lands, which were often proving to be inadequate farming land incapable of supporting a family. So Cornwallis was brought home, after passing a law making the creation of a Catholic church illegal. This is the reason that the Irish fishermen in Prospect were married and baptised in St Paul's Anglican Church until 1794, when the law was repealed because of the large influx of loyalists from New England after the American Revolution was over. He was replaced by General Hopson, formerly in charge of Louisburg. The many difficulties Cornwallis survived in the first few years of Halifax are outlined in the biography "Cornwallis - the Violent Birth of Halifax" by Jon Tattrie - topping the list were his aggressive stance with the Mi'kmacs resulting in frequent skirmishes, and the late arrival of many of the settlers too late to establish their housing, resulting in horrendous loss of life in the harsh winters.

The British next decided to create an entirely Protestant settlement in the peninsular seaside area of Mirligaiche: "That getting the excess people out of Halifax and into a community of their own was on the top of the new governor's agenda, is disclosed in the minutes of the governing Council dated August 10th, 1752. During this meeting, called shortly after Hopson's arrival, there was discussion as to what place might be best for a new settlement beyond Halifax. For some reason, which escapes me, and I find it curious, there was no discussion that led to any significant movement of the new arrivals to the farming lands in the western part of the province which we now refer to as the Annapolis Valley -- in and around the Acadians: Annapolis Royal and Minas. It ought to have been plain to everyone, from Hopson on down, that if what was wanted was to employ the newcomers as farmers (being from central Europe, they certainly had no experience in making a living from the sea) then the place for them was to be on lands known to be productive. The point is that the eastern seaboard of Nova Scotia was not the place to establish a farming community. Oh! Well, there were small patches of good land here and there; but most all of the eastern side of Nova Scotia is barren and rocky. But the question is -- Why this reluctance to move the newcomers in amongst the Acadians? I suppose, it was thought that

they, the German/Swiss, would most likely be absorbed by the Acadians and become more French than English.

Another important consideration, given the recent experiences with Indian raids, was that any new community should be in close communication with Halifax. Communication in those days meant traveling in order to deliver a message. Travel by sea, as uncertain as it was at times, was preferable to traveling through virgin forest the veils of which hide Indians. At any rate, during the Council meeting of August 10th, 1752, the only places under discussion were those along the Atlantic side of the province within a hundred miles or so of Halifax. It was intended that surveys should be carried out of the Chezzetcook area to the east and the LaHave area to the west. The harbours in these two areas had at times been occupied by the French, and, indeed, there was yet to be found scattered French families in these places.

To locate in an area that had been cleared and where salt marshes were nearby would be important. Time would be saved in clearing the land, and, the hay that grew naturally in the salt marshes could be harvested for the animals located both in the new community and those at Halifax. Most importantly, given the experiences that those at Halifax and Dartmouth had with Indian raids; whatever place that should be chosen, should be one that could be defended; it should be a peninsula. Thus; the place to be chosen would be one on the Atlantic, within (under normal conditions) a day's sail from Halifax, having a harbour to the west of a rising land head, with deep water just off the beach, a place which, at least in part, had been in the past cleared of large trees, which had salt marshes nearby; and which could easily be defended, a peninsula. Mirligaiche, or Lunenburg as it was to be called, qualified on all counts.

With the coming of the spring, further surveys were to be carried out of those areas which were thought to be appropriate for the settlement of the German/Swiss. In particular, the *Albany* was sent down to Mirligaiche with a contingent of rangers under Captain Lewis. They left Halifax on the April 23rd and by May 1st they were back at Halifax. Hopson, after taking into account the observations of Rous and Lewis, then made up his mind. Mirligaiche was the place at which to make the new settlement; its name was to be Lunenburg; and the chosen people together with the necessary supplies were to be sent down under a

strong guard to establish the new town as soon as the Boston ships were in place at Halifax to receive them.

One of the countries that contributed to the flotilla of ships that carried the new Protestant settlers to Lunenburg was Montbeliard. It was located near to the border of the German principality of Wurttemberg (near Stuttgart) and Switzerland. This area did not become part of France until Napoleon took it over in 1793. For centuries it had been one of the only French-speaking Protestant areas, because it had been administered for many years by the Duke of nearby Wurttemberg. This was the area from which the English recruited "foreigner Protestants" to populate central Nova Scotia.

The British governing board that looked after the settlement of Nova Scotia sought out foreign (i.e. non-British) protestants. The English were hard to persuade to emigrate, and often did not work out very well as settlers. The colonies to the south had had good results with foreign protestants and found them very hard-working and capable of settling new areas, so it was decided to recruit European protestants for Nova Scotia as well. Roman Catholics were not welcome.

The British government hired John Dick of Rotterdam as their agent to procure the emigrants and arrange for their transport to Nova Scotia. Dick sent agents up the Rhine River to find settlers. Posters and handbills were used to get the word out that the new colony of Nova Scotia was open for settlement.

There was a lot of competition between agents for the various colonies in those days, and competing agents spread rumours about how awful the Nova Scotia climate was, the lack of agricultural prospects, and the ferociousness of the Indian attacks. Also, once settlers arrived at Rotterdam they were sometimes convinced by another agent to sail for another colony.

Settlers were responsible for their own passage down the Rhine, although Dick's agents would help to arrange it. Tolls had to be paid along the way as the boats moved through different principalities, and this would also slow down the voyage.

The board preferred as much as possible that young single men be recruited, but in actual fact many families, and even older family members, made the voyage. This was probably for the best in the long run, as records show that the families were more likely to remain in Nova Scotia and settle down there. There were some complaints from the board as to the fact that older people were allowed to make the voyage, but entire families often moved together, and it was not really reasonable in those days of no social services to expect the old to be left behind. As well, emigrants aged 45 or more would be considered relatively old back then!

The emigrants were put aboard ships in Rotterdam. The "Sally" sailed on 30 May 1752, and arrived on 6 Sep 1752, but were not allowed to disembark until 26 Sep 1752. It was a long and stormy passage. There was more illness than usual, and it continued for a time after landing, which is likely why the passengers had to stay on board for almost a month after arrival. The Sally carried the large Boutilier family that came from Etobon, Montpelier, including Jean George Boutilier, a joiner (carpenter), five of his siblings and his aging parents Jean George and Sarah Grange who were 61 and 47. Sadly they both perished on the voyage.

However, the voyage also brought romance, as Jean George had met Anna Catherine Maillard from Chenebre, Montbeliard, and became one of the first Montbeliards to marry in the new world, Sept 16 1752 at St Paul's in Halifax, because the first church in Lunenburg (St John's Anglican) wasn't built yet. Jean George was a member of the Indian patrol defending Lunenburg in 1756, and by 1790 there were hundreds of Boutiliers in the area. He and Catherine had 13 children (including two, George Frederick and John James, who were hanged for murder in May 1791). His three brothers all had many children, and the huge Boutilier family ended up populating much of Lunenburg county, and later St Margaret's Bay when Joseph, his parents, and most of their family moved there. And that is how his daughter Mary Catherine was to meet and marry my great-great-grandfather James Redmond, grandson of David Redmond.

One of the earlier ships, the "Speedwell" brought another Boutilier family from Montbeliard, and a Coulen family, who became the large Coolen family of Fox Point. At first I had confused them with the William Coolen

family, David Redmond's friend from Newfoundland, whose son was later to marry David's grand-daughter Mary Redmond in Shad Bay, but the Fox Point Coolens are not related.

The Foreign Protestant immigration also brought the Moser family (of David's second wife) to Lunenburg. The patriarch of the family was a blacksmith, Hans Jacob Moser, who came from Bern, Switzerland on the Speedwell in 1751, with his wife Anna Zuiflower and five children. Judith, David Redmond's second wife, was the first in the family to be born in Canada - on 1 Aug 1754 in Kingsburg, on the first bay south of Lunenburg, at the mouth of the La Have River which leads to Bridgewater. There is a Mosher island in the mouth, named after the family. The expert on the Moser/Mosher family is John Cordes - see his chart [Descendants of Hans Jacob Moser](#)

<http://genealogy.johncordes.ca/roots/index.htm?ssmain=p3.htm;i69>

By 1956 many of the Foreign Protestants were complaining to their home country governments that the British had not lived up to promises the English had made of arable land. The land around Lunenburg was rocky and unsuitable even for subsistence farms. They complained that the best land was being given to American settlers - this was true, as our British Army pioneer John Umlah was given a land grant near Chester. Many of the Protestants had to settle for tiny plots in Lunenburg where they stayed for a generation before being able to get land in the adjoining Bays, including St Margaret's Bay where the Redmonds were to prosper.

Most of the immigrants were farmers, but found that in order to support their families, they had to learn to fish and to build sailing vessels. However, some of the settlers were very innovative, and their schooner design was different from anywhere else in the world, because they had never built ships before. The Lunenburg schooners allowed the foreigners to join the Irish and others fishing the Grand Banks, and provided a boat building industry that thrived for decades, even after the conversion of ocean vessels to steam.

Considering over 2000 settlers arrived at Lunenburg in 1751-52 and most of them stayed in the area, few married into the mostly Catholic

Redmond family - and mostly after several generations. The two early exceptions were my GGGrandmother Mary Catherine Boutilier, whose grandparents and great grand-parents arrived on the Sally, and Elizabeth Ruder, whose grandfather Johann Gottlieb Ruder arrived on the "Sally" from Palatinate Germany (bordering NE France). Elizabeth married Thomas Redmond Jr, David's grandson. Mary Catherine's mother Magdalana was the daughter of Johan Jacob Schlagentweit, from the Wurttenburg German principality. He was one of the three patriarchs (including Boutilier) who were the largest families on St Margaret's Bay - the third one, Jean George Dauphinee, was a shoemaker who came on the Speedwell in 1752 from Longeville in Montbeliard. Elizabeth Ruder's mother was a Dauphinee.

Other Foreign Protestant pioneers whose descendants married into the Redmond family four or more generations later, in the twentieth century, include Ulrich Hubele (Hubley) on the "Pearl" from Palatinate Germany; Johannes Morash, a farmer from Heubach, Germany on the "Murdoch", Johann, Martin or Michael Peke (Beck) a farmer on the "Pearl" from Durbach, Germany, Johann Heinrich Fader from Isenberg, Germany (into the Coolen family); and Johannes Eisenhauer (Isnor), a farmer from Willensfeld, Germany on the "Pearl". Johannes has the distinction of being the pioneer of the family which boasts US President Dwight D Eisenhower, but his great grand-daughter also married into our Umlah family.

Most of these settlers were German, and as in the US, proved to be more reliable to stay and make their homes here than the British, who were primarily poor urban residents escaping poverty, and did not react well to the cold weather in Nova Scotia.

THE UMLAH AND REDMOND FAMILIES AND THE ARMY

The second likely way that the Redmonds came to Nova Scotia is through the British Army. This would explain how David and William Redmond and their friend John Umlah were able to get land grants in Nova Scotia near Prospect, Shad Bay, Chester and Seabright. Although there is no evidence that David Redmond ever joined the military, it is certainly possible that William Redmond was in the army, or possibly that he was

a Loyalist in New England. Whether "Uncle William" was a father, brother, or a son of David is not determined. If he is a son, brother to Thomas, then we don't find his baptism in the St Paul's parish register, but there were gaps in the register due to a couple of fires at the church in the late 1700s. If he and Thomas were baptised in the new OLMC catholic church in Prospect, the church records before 1824 have been lost. If William and his wife were the Redmonds on the Cornwallis ships, he could have escaped to New England, and later earned his land by joining the British Army to fight the Americans, or he may have joined the Loyalists fleeing after the American Revolution - many were given land in Canada.

Much as I would have liked my ancestors to have come here as hard workers in the fishing industry, rather than as soldiers enjoying the spoils of war, I fear that there was some military background in my family. David Redmond's good friend John Umlah was known to be a soldier of some twenty years service, and, being the father of Thomas' wife Margaret, is also one of our family's pioneers. His story is tied up in the historic warfare that took place in the Seven Year War between France and its British and German opponents in the 1750s, both in Europe and in North America.

Earlier we mentioned the difficult relationship with the French and the Mi'cmaq Indians in defending Halifax and Lunenburg. In 1751 several families in Dartmouth were massacred by the Indians, and their scalps were delivered to the French for compensation. I always thought that scalping was a particularly brutal sin of the Indian peoples, but in fact it was just a way of counting victims in order to receive payment from Europeans - in this case the French. In 1753 Governor General of New France, Pierre Francois de Rigaud, orrdered the top military figure in Acadia [Charles Deschamps de Boishébert et de Raffetot](#) to send a [Mi'kmaw](#) Mi'cmaq militia to raid Lunenburg. The French garrison was at Ste. Anne's Point (near present day Fredericton, New Brunswick), where Boishébert was stationed.

Five settlers near Lunenburg were killed in the raid, and Marie Anne Payzant and her four young children were captured, after her husband was scalped. This led to the local British garrison defending the fortifications at Lunenburg being reinforced. Because of the strength of the Acadian militia and Mi'kmaw militia, British officer John_Knox wrote

that "In the year 1757 we were said to be Masters of the province of Nova Scotia, or Acadia, which, however, was only an imaginary possession." He continues to state that the situation in the province was so precarious for the British that the "troops and inhabitants" at Fort Edward, Fort Sackville and Lunenburg "could not be reputed in any other light than as prisoners."¹

Meanwhile, near Pittsburgh, a large British force led by Gen. Braddock, and including Daniel Boone and 23 year old George Washington, engaged the French and Indians at Fort Duquesne, to recover from Washington's loss of Fort Necessity a year earlier. The Pennsylvania and Ohio settlers were attempting to expand into the Mississippi valley, held by the French and their Indian allies. Braddock was soundly defeated, and the subsequent Indian raids killing and burning settlers and their properties in western Pennsylvania had frightened Philadelphia.

Because Philadelphia had been settled by peaceful Quakers and Mennonites, its occupants did not easily support military recruitment. Despite the assistance of Benjamin Franklin, the best the Governor could do was to authorize a voluntary militia to defend the settlers. With not too many takers, they were forced to permit the recruitment of servants, who were able to get out of their work obligations to the masters who funded the cost of their ocean passage, by joining the military. Since 80% of the recruits were recent immigrants, and two thirds of them became indentured servants to pay for their crossings, it is highly likely that John Umlah with his young family would have been attracted.

As many of his fellow recruits would have been of German heritage (17% of recent immigrants to Pennsylvania were from the same areas of Germany as the Lunenburg settlers), and since the need for British troops to defend Lunenburg was so urgent, I expect this would account for him moving to Chester, Nova Scotia, joining the 40th Regiment of Foot which defended Halifax and Lunenburg, and receiving the land grant to house his growing family there. The three year gap between his children in Philadelphia and in Chester probably allowed him to take part in the historic battles at Louisbourg in 1758, and later with General Wolfe at the Plains of Abraham in 1759.

It is even possible that he might have met David Redmond or William Redmond at these battles, as one of the other regiments in these battles

was the 60th Royal American regiment of Foot, which was to be recruited in Germany (an ally back then), and the German colonists in North America. Apparently their recruitment efforts didn't bear enough fruit, and over half of the regiment was recruited from among Irish people who had previously been rejected by the British Army (that does sound like William & David).

The British had tired of the constant raids by the Indians and French, and had determined that the French Acadian settlers were to be deported from Nova Scotia, starting in 1755. Acadians were required to sign an oath of allegiance to the King of England, but even if they did, the English didn't trust them once the Seven Years War was underway. Many were forcibly evacuated to New England by boat, and when some of them found their way back on the mainland, more brutal tactics were employed to force them out. Those who refused to sign the allegiance were held in the prison island of Georges in Halifax harbour - over 1600 were imprisoned there until they could be deported back to France. Interestingly, most of the Acadians who ended up in Louisiana were among the ones who were deported originally back to France.

The major battle occurred at Louisbourg in summer of 1758. The British forces assembled at Halifax under the command of General Amherst, and began the siege of Louisbourg in May. The French had been unable to send naval reinforcements due to the loss of a naval battle in Marseille, and were outnumbered four to one on the ground. The critical landing west of Louisbourg was led by Gen. Wolfe, and his troops were also instrumental in burning armaments on the largest of the defending ships, (causing the loss of three ships), and soon in the removal of the naval defenses by the navy.

John Umlah was almost certainly involved in this battle. He probably would have been in the 40th Regiment of Foot (Phillips), and may have stayed closer to home, but was probably there at the final siege of Montreal. The German regiment joined Fraser's Highlanders with General Wolfe in the battle of the Plains of Abraham when both Wolfe and Montcalm were killed. Montcalm kept his larger, but untrained troops inside the fortifications to avoid battling the more professionally trained British army. He was forced to land his provisions at Batiscau, miles up-river, and transport them over land, which eventually Wolfe discovered, leading to the climactic battle on the Plains of Abraham.

I prefer to imagine my ancestor John Umlah fighting my wife Fran's French Canadian cousin Jean Baptiste Gamache, who fought under Montcalm, battling to save his homeland from the evil British empire! So, while John was going home to his growing family in Chester and his new friend David Redmond, Jean Baptiste was leaving his homeland to join up with countrymen in Fort Detroit and the French lands of the Mississippi.

Jean Baptiste was smitten by the Fort Detroit governor's thirteen year old daughter Charlotte Louviers D'Amour. To remain near her, he volunteered to join an exploration of the upper Mississippi. When his paramour was old enough, he received her father's permission to propose, and took his fiancée along on the voyage that made him one of the twenty-seven pioneers of the village of St Louis. Their wedding on 3 May 1767 was the first wedding recorded in St Louis. It was a grand affair of over 200 people, coming from his home in Cap St Ignace, her relatives from Montreal and Detroit, the entire population of St Louis, and Acadians from New Orleans who had come up the river.

And so I leave the French Canadian ancestors, and the eighteenth century Redmond family pioneers and their mysteries in Nova Scotia, and carry on to the Scottish women who populated our line of the Redmond family, and the Scottish clearances which brought so many of my ancestors and Fran's paternal line to Cape Breton in the 1800s.

WILLIAM BISHOP FROM FALKIRK

The first of our Scottish ancestors to come to Canada was William Bishop, whose grand-daughter Marie Elizabeth is my great great grandmother Mrs. James Redmond. He was born in Falkirk, Stirlingshire, Scotland on July 27, 1766, married Agnes Melville in 1802, and had most of their children in Falkirk before emigrating to the Halifax area about 1816. He was probably a shoemaker in Halifax, as both of his eldest sons John and William, and all of John's sons became shoemakers.

Both William and Agnes' mothers were Callendars, a family named after the land in Falkirk which had been owned for centuries by the Livingstone family. Their fortunes waxed and waned with the Scottish kings approval, and they would often lose their lands after supporting the wrong side - opposing Cromwell in 1651, and joining the Jacobite uprising in 1715, despite being Protestant. Their interesting history is described online at

<http://www.callendarestate.co.uk/aboutus/history>. The beautiful manor house, built in the fourteenth century, still exists today as a museum - Callendar House.

The Callendar Estate was ordered divested to the York Building Co. in 1715, and in the latter part of the century it was bought at auction by William Forbes, one of the wealthiest men in the country, as a result of his business copper-plating the hulls of British warships. This was a not uncommon event in Scottish history, as the land became more profitable, the landowners sold to lowlanders, the newly wealthy business people benefiting from the Industrial Revolution, and soon they spoke a different accent than their crofters, and lost their kinship with and concern for their tenants.

In 1746 there was another Jacobite uprising when the Catholic "heir" to the Scottish crown, Charles Stuart (Bonnie Prince Charlie) returned from

exile in France and attempted to restore a Catholic monarch to the throne. They achieved a significant victory over the Hanoverian army of the Duke of Cumberland in Falkirk. The majority of Scots stayed loyal to the English king, and so the Protestant army much outnumbered Charles' forces, and they were convincingly defeated at the battle of Culloden. Their overnight march to surprise their opponents backfired, as the army was up early to celebrate the birthday of their leader, and the march left Charles' army tired, and mired in the marshland where they chose to attack.

Edward Cornwallis, the founder of Nova Scotia, earned his military spurs under the command of the Duke of Wellington at Culloden when the highlanders under Charles were defeated. He pursued the "Pacification" of the Highlands with relish, slaughtering thousands of men, women and children throughout the Highlands, chasing and eliminating all opposition to the King. Cornwallis was one of the most brutal of the English commanders.

The Catholic Scots were exiled to the southern islands in the Hebrides, on the west side of Scotland. Fran's ancestral MacKinnons were chased to the island of Barra, where they joined the McNeil clan which had ruled Barra for centuries. Barra and South Uist became the last frontier for the Catholics, so impoverished that they were left alone by the Protestant majority.

In 1790 great changes began in Falkirk - the beginnings of the mass migration out of the Scottish Highlands known as the Clearances. The feudal land system was breaking down as the leaders were forced to divest their properties after supporting the wrong side in the uprisings, and the new land owners became aware of the fortunes to be made in industry by improving productivity. So there was a movement to forsake their obligations to their tenants in order to bring in much more profitable sheep herding. The common areas which the poor tenants used to pasture their few farm animals and share their horses were fenced in to contain sheep, and the poor were pushed to move into the towns and onto the remote shores to take up fishing, and find other ways to support themselves. And soon there were posters and newspaper ads everywhere where ship-owners pushed their services to facilitate emigration to the new lands in Canada, the US, and Australia.

William Bishop was probably one of the few who were able to pay their own fare on a ship to Halifax about 1814. He was almost fifty years old, with a young wife and family when he emigrated. In his twenties, the new landowner William Forbes made himself very unpopular when his new leases required his tenants to adopt modern farming practices, like leaving land fallow, and liming the fields. If they refused, they were removed. Falkirk was a larger town, having a large and prosperous Carron Ironworks which had contracts with the military to provide small cannons (carronades) for defending ships, and made parts for John Watts' steam engines. It is likely that William moved to the town, learned a skill (shoe-making), and established himself before starting his family, and choosing to emigrate as his family grew.

ARCHIBALD MACKINNON FROM BARRA

Archibald is my wife Fran's Great Great Grandfather on her father's side.

The story of the Clearances was quite different for the exiled Catholic clan on Barra. In 1756 Donald Og MacNeil returned from his stint in the army that forced the siege of Louisbourg, which led to the defeat of the French, and their banishment from the Maritimes. He was full of praises of the Bras D'Or, the huge lakes in Cape Breton, and encouraged his peers to emigrate, leaving detailed instructions on where to find the best place to settle. He was one of many Scots who had sampled the land in Cape Breton, and seen that it was very much like the Scottish highlands in many ways. Cape Breton's fabulous reputation with Scots was fed by the many pioneer Scots who had been the early migrants to the area, as well as by the advertising of the lumber shipping companies looking to fill their ships with migrants on the return ships to Canada.

At the time of Donald Og's return, Barra crofters were able to make a pretty good living harvesting kelp from the coastlines, and peat from the hills. The former had a good market for producing iodine from the kelp, furnishing chemicals needed in the soap making and glassmaking industries, as well as in the manufacture of beauty creams and tooth paste. The peat was extensively used for fuel, particularly in France. It was a particularly labour intensive activity, and the Clan leaders needed a large force of tenants to harvest and process the kelp. They lived in

modest homes made of clay or wattle, or cut turf, and the rooves were thatched in whatever vegetation was around - heather, straw, rushes, bracken - whatever.

The Napoleonic wars cut off access to France for twenty years, and this was a big part of Barra's market. Then in 1820 England removed the tariffs on kelp products from cheaper foreign sources, and the kelp market suddenly disappeared. Simultaneously this left the McKay chiefs with little need for a large work force, and left their crofters in dire straits, often starving in order to meet their rents. There had sprung up numerous emigration societies to organize mass immigration, and the Donald MacNeil plans from fifty years ago were resurrected. A lumber ship, the Harmony, was engaged to carry most of the inhabitants of Barra to emigrate, dropping them off in Cape Breton, where they found their way to the desired lands at Christmas Island and Iona, straddling the border between Cape Breton county and Victoria County, on opposite sides of the Bras D'Or.

The Mackinnon family of Neil MacKinnon arrived in Christmas Island from their voyage on the Harmony in 1822, when Archibald was only fourteen. His father Neil and the whole family emigrated together, and the other pioneers that came with them from Barra spread out on the shores of the Bras D'Or up as far as Boisdale, as documented in the two books MacMillan, A.J. "To the Hill of Boisdale" and "MacKenzie's History of Christmas Island Parish" by Archibald A. MacKenzie. Neil was quite elderly at the time of the passage, so Archibald is regarded as the pioneer of Fran's family.

Fran and her sister Mary visited Christmas Island in 2002 and stayed with their great uncle Donald MacKinnon, who had stayed near Christmas Island/Shenecadie as a train station master, living above the train station in his younger days. The family had stayed there for three generations before Fran's grandfather Francis MacKinnon moved to Vancouver. The Catholic communities of Barra and South Uist in the Outer Hebrides had picked up and moved to Cape Breton where they populated the large area around the Bras D'Or lakes.

THE MCKAY/MACDONALD FAMILIES FROM THE OUTER HEBRIDES

The Protestant islands in the Hebrides were not pressured by the Clearances until the early 1840s, just before the great potato famine. By this time the landlords were sufficiently anxious to relieve themselves of all obligations to their tenants that they would hire ships to permit their tenants to join the earlier emigrants to America, which chiefly meant Cape Breton. Ironically, by the mid 1850s the maltreated sheep herders were joining the masses to emigrate to Australia. By the end of the 1800s, the Highland sheep farmers in turn lost their livelihood when cheaper mutton and wool from their former workers in Australia undercut the Scottish products.

The origins of my grandmother Katherine McKay's ancestors are less certain than the other pioneers due to the sparsity of early nineteenth century parish records in the less populated areas of the Highlands and Hebrides, and the fact that in areas like the Hebrides where each island was dominated by one clan, the names were too popular to permit tracing accurate family origins. For example, over two thirds of the emigrants from Barra were named MacNeil, and similar problems were found in the Protestant islands to the north dominated by the MacLeods and MacDonalDs.

By the time Katherine's Protestant ancestors arrived in Cape Breton about 1840, all of the more desirable land on the east side of Cape Breton had been snapped up. The late emigrants were less prepared for establishing themselves in Cape Breton than families from the earlier planned emigrations, and, even though the government had opened up the land grant system to include all Scots, not just those with Loyalist or military backgrounds, much of the fishing grounds on the coast-lines around Mira and Arichat were occupied.

Katherine's grandfather Duncan McKay (1823-1883) arrived around 1820. He was among the Pabbay residents who were forced from their land on the small three mile long island of Pabbay off the coast of the large Hebrides Island of Harris. Their landlord was the leader of the MacLeod clan, who lived on the main island Harris. For some years his peasants living on Pabbay had been able to provide reasonable rents

because of the four illegal stills on the island which produced revenues from the sale of their whiskey.

Sadly, in 1840 the Pabbay distillers were caught, and this incident was used as an excuse for the MacLeods of Harris to evict the entire population of three hundred fifteen in Pabbay, save for one family to look after the sheep. Today the white sand beaches of Pabbay are deserted except for one sheep farmer and his flock.

My grandmother Katherine's grandparents Duncan and Christy McLeod were married in 1827 on Pabbay, and had four children there, including my cousin Ross McKay's great grandmother Rachel (1829), - one died. They arrived in Boularderie, an island in the Bras D'Or, about 1840, and had the rest of their family there, including Katherine's father Neil (1841), Christy (1844) and Roderick (1846).

Katherine's maternal grandparents Donald McDonald and Catherine McLennan were married in St John's Anglican Church in Arichat, just south of Grand River in 1843. Donald was born in North Uist around 1822, one of the dominant Protestant McDonald clan (the Catholic branch of the McDonalds had long ago separated and lived in South Uist). He came to Nova Scotia with his parents John Alexander McDonald (1797-1873) from North Uist, and Christie McKenzie (1794-1871) from Lochbarron, Ross-shire, a small town on the mainland just a short distance from the Isle of Skye. They settled and lived the rest of their lives in Loch Lomond, where their son Donald met Catherine.

The McDonald clan branch that eventually chose loyalty to the English king occupied the Isle of Skye and nearby North Uist. In the 1715 rebellion Sir Donald Macdonald, 4th Baronet came home to Skye from his genteel life in Glasgow to raise an army in support of the Jacobites. He was also known as *Dòmhnall a' Chogaidh* ("Donald of the war"). They were defeated, and Donald was required to appear in person to declare his loyalty. Due to illness, he was unable to travel, but sent a letter. This was not accepted, and his lands were forfeited. However after his death his sons appealed, and their lands were returned. In the 1745 rebellion led by Prince Charlie, the McDonald chiefs refused to join, and in fact raised a small company in support of the King. Later the McDonalds joined the British Army and served in the American Revolutionary War. In the meantime a survey found that the clan lands were in very poor

condition and the people were in extreme poverty. For example, the tenants of North Uist had lost 745 cows , 573 horses and 820 sheep by a plague.

Meanwhile, In 1766 Sir Alexander Macdonald became the 9th Baronet of Sleat (Skye and N. Uist) after his brother James went to Italy because of ill health. He had a completely different temperament "if not wholly English, at least entirely anti-Celtic". He raised the rents upon his estates, and evicted many of the poorer tenants from their holdings. During his chiefship, several tacksmen in Skye and Uist gave up their leases and emigrated. When Boswell and Johnson visited Skye in 1773, they encountered an emigrant ship, filled with tacksmen and their tenants, about to sail. This brief history of the McDonalds of Sleat have been excerpted from the Wikipedia history.

Although I have been unable to prove that Catherine McLennan (abt 1827-1887) belonged to the family of Alexander Ban and Barbara McLennan, it seems very likely. They emigrated from Lochbarron around the time of the Boswell visit, and there were two McLennan families on the famous voyage of the Hector to Pictou in 1773 (the first large emigration of Scots to Nova Scotia). The research of George MacLennan in Rootsweb shows a family of Alexander/Allister Ban and Barbara McLennan having children in Loch Lomond in 1826 and 1829. It seems logical to me that Donald McDonald's mother Christie, being from Lochbarron too, would have socialized with the McLennan family, and Arichat is only a short river ride south from Loch Lomond. If it is indeed true, then it is possible to extend my mother's maternal line back two more generations, as the Mertz Genealogy shows Allister Ban's parents as Hugh McLennan & Isabella McKay, and Barbara's parents as John MacLennan & Flora Matheson.

FRAN'S FAMILY MOVES WEST

Fran's Houle line from Louis Houde's youngest son Etienne moved through Becancour and Les Cedres to St Zotique just east of Montreal. Her maternal great great grandfather Abraham Houle married Angelique Asselin, and when the Asselin family and his Uncle Martin Houle's family

decided to move to French northern ontario, he moved his family to a farm in Lafontaine in Tiny township, Simcoe County about 1867. Five children were born in St Zotique, and nine more in Lafontaine.

Fran's great grandmother Odile was the eldest child, and married Telesphore Picard in Lafontaine, having two children, Mary and Fran's grandfather Edmund Picard. She was only 15 when she married in 1873, and sadly, she passed away a little more than a year after Edmund was born, only 19 years old. Edmund told his children that he was always very grateful to Abraham and Angelique for taking him in, and raising him as if their own child -- Telesphore abandoned his kids, remarried, and moved far away to Rhode Island, USA.

Abraham's children found work in the forest industry, often working in very remote corners of Ontario, just north of Georgian Bay. In his old age Abraham moved the family to Massey, Ontario where his sons were working, and lived there to the ripe old age of 84 in 1909. It was in Massey that Edmund married Rose Gamache in 1901, thus joining the families of Louis Houde and Nicolas Gamache. Rose's father Damase was the adventuring spirit who first left L'Islet for Sault Ste Marie around 1880. He married widow Marie Labre, a Metis, and added five children, including Rose, to the four Marie had with her first husband. They lived on the Garden River reserve just east of Sault Ste Marie.

In 1906 Edmund & Rose caught the wave to Alberta, moving to Pincher Creek around 1906 with their two eldest children Aileen and Garfield. Rose's half-brother Edward Mayotte had lived there for a few years, after finding work on the railway. Edmund applied for a land grant, and received land in nearby Beaver Mines, where Edmund worked as a blacksmith, and four more children arrived. By 1919 when Fran's mother Florence was born, the family had moved a few miles west to Blairmore where the coal mines employed thousands. Aileen and Garfield always spoke French, but the rest of the family that was born in Alberta were English speaking.

In 1945 Fran's parents met at a Catholic sponsored dance in Calgary. Florence went to the dance with a group of student nurses from the hospital where she was training. It happened that Colin MacKinnon was in Calgary on accounting business, and at the suggestion of his Monsignor friend, went to the dance. The monsignor even pointed him

in the right direction to the nurses in the corner, and romance was born. Their courtship proceeded as the country was celebrating the end of World War II, and they were married in Blairmore in November 28, 1945.

And so, we come to the birth of my sweetheart Fran during the giant snowstorm of Nov 20, 1946 where my father had been stranded at work at the Edmonton Journal. Florence went into labour the day before, and her eldest sister Aileen came over to be with her. Edmund and Florence lived over the store which they ran in downtown Blairmore. The snowstorm began, and by the time Edmund headed out to find the doctor, it was waist deep. The doctor wasn't at his home, but his wife contacted him, and shortly after, he arrived on a huge mining truck, sliding down from the mountain of snow the truck had plowed ahead of it! It snowed heavily all night, and Frances Rose finally arrived at dawn.

It was Colin's father Francis McKinnon who had been the first Cape Breton McKinnon to cross the country, joining the western migration, arriving in Vancouver around 1910. He had met his future wife Clara Quigley during their Catholic childhood in Bridgewater, NS. She had moved to Halifax, but when her father, liquor merchant William S Quigley, died in 1910, his wife Elizabeth moved the family out west to Vancouver - possibly to start a new life away from her husband's business friends. So Francis and Clara met each other again in Vancouver at another Catholic dance, and married on 8 Sep 1914, when Clara was thirty.

Colin was the eldest of their five children. Like his father before him, he became an accountant, after carefully considering going into the Catholic priesthood, as his younger brother Jack was to do. So Colin, being one of the youngest accountants in his firm, was often required to travel to audit at the request of the firm's clients. That business trip to Calgary brought about the events that led to my sweetie being here for me to fall in love with. After connecting her family to the above mentioned pioneers, I leave it to her to write her interesting family history, and introduce you to the characters in her family that have made her genealogy research such a joy to share.

MARLU'S GERMAN FAMILY IMMIGRATION AFTER WORLD WAR II

The most recent pioneer that brought our family to Canada was the German family of my first wife, and my children's mother, Marlu Bodewein (Maria Luise). I am grateful to my daughter Julie for preserving the family records of Marlu's grandmother, which has allowed me to speculate on her family's life in Germany, their experiences during the war, and their arrival in the new world after the war.

Her grandmother Luise Wilhelmine Bodewein (Budde) was born in 1898 in St Tonis, Germany. The registrations she has collected show that her family has lived in the area for four generations, near Lobberich, which is only two miles from the boundary between Germany and the Netherlands. The nearest big city is Dusseldorf. St Tonis where she was born, and Krefeld, where she lived her married life, are both within ten miles of Lobberich in the west and Dusseldorf to the southeast.

Her parents, Johann Budde and Maria Kahlen, had at least six children - Louise had the funeral cards from two married sisters (Eleanore Lehr, Maria Luise Boetkes) and brother Richard Budde, and her obituary mentioned two surviving brothers in Germany. All of them lived in the same area of Germany.

In 1920 she married Dr. Heinrich (Henry) J A Bodewein in Lobberich, and they had two daughters - Marlu's mother Felicitas Maria Eleonore in 1921 and her Aunt Marlice - Maria Luise Clementine in 1923. Sadly, by the time he had become a successful doctor specializing in rheumatoid diseases, the marriage had fallen apart, and in 1937 they were divorced in the nearby court in Munster, Westfalia, Germany.

Both of these daughters were paralyzed by unknown childhood horrors, which affected their ability to deal with stress. Being so close to the border with Netherlands, they would have been in the thick of the Blitzkrieg when German soldiers marched across the border to conquer Netherlands in September 1940. We can only imagine how frightening it must have been to be recently divorced and alone with two teen-age

daughters in war-time. Marlu (Maria Luise Felicitas Bodewein) was born in Vienna Austria on Nov 20 1943.

It seems likely that Dr. Bodewein, a mature and successful doctor, could have been posted to a hospital in Vienna, perhaps the Vienna General Hospital where Marlu was born. It would be easy to see that the family may have decided the two young daughters would be safer with their father in Vienna, than right in the path of the imminent invasion by the Allies. We see a stamp in Louise Bodewein's passport showing that she visited Vienna in November 1943, to be with her daughter who was giving birth to her first grandchild. Perhaps it was no accident that Marlu wasn't baptized until 10 Aug 1944, in the tiny town of Holzgau at the extreme western end of Austria. At that time D-Day had happened, and the battles were raging along the Germany Netherlands border - Eindhoven in Netherlands was taken in Sept. 1944. Maybe the grandmother had a friend in Holzgau, and was able to escape Lobberich and look after Marlu in Holzgau - seeing to it that she was baptized.

The whole family eventually ended up in North America. The father Dr. Henry J A Bodewein was probably the first to emigrate - he had set up his practice in Saint John, New Brunswick by 1947, and practiced there until 1960, when he retired at age 65 to Florida, and passed away in 1962 in Ormond Beach, Florida, where he is buried in the Hillside Cemetery.

Marlu's father was Walter Brinkhaus, a businessman in Vienna. He didn't marry Felicite, probably because he was married, and older. Felicite then apparently met and married Tom Shelton, probably an American serviceman in Austria after the war. He brought her and Marlu to Detroit, where he and Felicite had three boys. Marlu recalls greatly enjoying baby-sitting her little brothers. The family moved to Los Angeles California, leaving Marlu with her grandmother in Toronto.

Aunt Marlice (Maria Luise) met a young psychiatrist Wilhelm Kreyes, probably in Vienna. By 1951 they were married, and had emigrated to Saint John, NB where Marlice worked briefly as a sales clerk in Oct 1951. Wilhelm was only listed as a Doctor in Saint John one year, in 1957 - probably he would have had to intern under a Canadian doctor to get his accreditation, and perhaps to improve his English. In 1961 Wilhelm set up a psychiatric clinic in Selkirk, Manitoba, and wrote a scientific paper about the experience in 1968. He several times had to defend himself

against accusations from his peers that he had participated in the Nazi psychiatric experiments on the mentally ill, a charge which he vehemently denied, claiming that he was treating all combat soldiers with psychiatric problems - American patients as well as German, and all the warring countries' soldiers. However, it is possible he may have known some of the perpetrators, as he was training as a young doctor, and one of the biggest psychiatric hospitals where atrocities occurred was in Vienna. Maybe he met Aunt Marlice through her father, who was also a doctor, probably in Vienna. In any case, Dr. Bodewein probably sponsored the young couple's emigration to Saint John in/before 1951.

So the grandmother was the last one in the family to emigrate - accepting the assistance of her ex-husband so she could be closer to her daughters. She arrived in January of 1953 - and apparently tried to get typing qualifications to become a secretary. In her effects she kept a four page paper on the difficulties of divorce by an eminent expert - apparently she typed it for her typing exam. She also kept a letter from her ex-husband to his brother in Germany in which he said that his wife was contentedly settled in, but that he no longer felt close to her, and was happy with his current girl friend. It is hard to believe Louise would have typed this for him, but it does contain numerous typing errors, corrected in pen, - she was trying to learn to type, and the letter was found in her effects.

By 1954 Louise had moved to Toronto, and was working for the Campus Coop (the same one where I later lived as a college student), as a cook's assistant to Elsie Kader. Whether Elsie was a friend from Germany who offered her a job, or they became friends working together, they were close enough that grandmother Louise trusted her to look after her grand-daughter Marlu when she moved to Winnipeg in 1962, probably when she retired. By this time Aunt Marlice and Wilhelm Kreyes were set up in Winnipeg. Marlice had become quite a successful artist, one of a handful of Manitoba artists of note. Her paintings were often of the backs of people, usually her husband, looking at a peaceful scene.

We know this because in 1956 she needed a letter of reference from her employer vouching for her character, and her intention to return to Toronto - in order to be granted a temporary US Visa so she could visit Felicite, who was due to have her third son in Detroit. Something happened on that trip, as the Shelton family had decided they were going to move to Los Angeles. Whether her step-father and mother rejected

poor Marlu, or the grandmother insisted she would be better off with her, Marlu ended up in Toronto, living first with her grandmother at 392 Huron St, and later when she was in college and her grandmother moved to Winnipeg, at Mrs. Kader's rooming house at 398 Huron St.

Both Marlu and her Aunt Marlice sadly ended their lives with suicides - whether victims of a terrible war, or of their parents' divorce or second marriage, they lived with something traumatic that they were never willing to talk about, at least not to me. They were both intelligent, accomplished women, but both had an inner vulnerability they weren't able to overcome. Louise lived to be 71, and is buried in the Waverley cemetery in Winnipeg together with her daughter Marie Luise Kreyes, who died three years later. Louise passed away in July of 1970, in the summer when Marlu and I were planning our August wedding. Aunt Marlice and Wilhelm attended our wedding, and later I met them when we stayed at their beautiful home on the river when we were moving our family to Vancouver. Both Louise and Aunt Marlice were very fond of Marlu - in her will, she left everything to her husband, but if he had predeceased her, the estate would have gone to Marlu - then Mary Lou Hayeem.

I conclude the story of my ex-wife's German family with the obituary of grandmother Louise Bodewein:

" On the 3rd of July, 1970, at the Grace Hospital, Mrs. Louise Bodewein aged 72 years, of 126 Luxton Avenue, Winnipeg. Mrs. Bodewein was born in West Germany and came to Canada in 1953, and had resided in Winnipeg since 1963. She was predeceased by her husband Henry, in 1962. Mrs. Bodewein is survived by: Mrs. Faye Shelton, in California, and Mrs. W. (Mary Luise) Kreyes in St. James-Assiniboia; a granddaughter, Marlu Hayeem, of Toronto; two brothers residing in Germany, and three grandsons and one great-granddaughter (Julie). A memorial service will be held at 7:00 p.m. on Tuesday in Pineview Memorial Chapel, Waverley St. at Chevrier Blvd. Fort Garry, with Rev. C.L.G.Rowland officiating. If friends so desire, contributions may be made to the Manitoba Cancer Treatment and Research Foundation. Arrangements by Clark Leatherdale, Fort Garry, Phone 452-7621"

Canadian Citizenship was granted to Louise Wilhelmine Bodewein of Toronto, Ontario, Canada on Sep 10 1958, Place of Birth Germany, Date

of Birth 12 Apr 1898, Marital status Divorced; female, height 5' 1", blue eyes, Grey hair, no distinguishing marks. She received a congratulatory letter from the minister of Immigration, Ellen Fairclough, who was the first ever female cabinet minister in Canada.

Dr. Bodewein retired from medical practice in Saint John in 1960, and moved to live in sunny Florida. He died in 1962, and is buried in Hillside cemetery, Ormond Beach, Florida, three miles from Orlando, according to FindAGrave. We didn't find Marlu's mother Felicite because she had married Tom Shelton, and had americanized her name to Faye. She lived until 1984, and died in Los Angeles. Her husband Thomas J Shelton (probably - there are 16 Tom Sheltons in LA) lived until Jan 2004. He was born in 22 Jul 1923, which would make him 22 at the end of war, so highly likely to be an American soldier in Germany. His social security card was issued in Mississippi. This I found in the US Social Security Death Index. Tom and Felicite had their third child in 1956 in Detroit, so it appears that they left Marlu with her grandmother when they moved to Los Angeles shortly thereafter.

While the Redmonds and most of their pioneers were already in Canada by 1750, my English side lived in the town of Willoughby, Warwickshire for 140 years, living a mainly rural existence as farm labourers, much as their predecessors had since feudal times. It wasn't until the late nineteenth century that the Ash family began to leave the farm to pursue more urban work - insurance, hat making, shoemaking, postal officers etc.

It all began with my GGGGrandmother Prudence Ash, who lived in the village in the 1740s and had three children, apparently out of wedlock. She died in child-birth of her daughter Elisabeth on May 3 1751 - her baby survived only until Dec 7 of the same year. My GGGGrandfather James Ash was born about 1746, according to his death entry in the parish register for St Nicholas Church in Willoughby on Dec. 12 1822. His brother William was baptised in St Nicholas on 25 Mar 1750, and both Prudence and her daughter Elisabeth's deaths are in the register of the local Church of England, St Nicholas.

It is highly likely that he was born to Prudence Ash, as she was the only Ash in the St Nicholas register. Because his baptism isn't recorded in St Nicholas, it is possible that he was born somewhere else, and brought to Willoughby as a baby. His mother moved to Willoughby, possibly because she had a sibling there, or her husband's family if she was a widow. It is also possible that she moved there for a job - possibly working as a barmaid or housekeeper for one of the four local pubs/inns.

It is a mystery who James' father was. There was only one Ash in the Willoughby register - Henry Ash, who died in 1736. He could have been Prudence's father, or, less likely, her husband if she was a widow. Prudence was not a common name, but had been favored by the Puritans in the 1600s. Who was the father, and who raised James in Willoughby? Candidates include Thomas Shaw - his wife died in 1746, and being a farmer, his family had money; Edward or Robert Boddington, the butchers, could have fathered James; or Robert's wife Prudence could have been an aunt of Prudence Ash - Edward Boddington was a witness at James' first marriage. Another possibility is John Cowley's father

Moses (John could have been James' half-brother). James Ash witnessed John's marriage to Mary Mager in 1794. It may be significant that James named a daughter Elizabeth in both of his two families.

The Shaw genealogy may also be relevant, as Thomas is a possible father of James Ash. His son Lumley married Mary Arnold, who I believe is a daughter of George Arnold Esq. of Ashby Lodge, Lord of the Manor at neighboring town Ashby St. Ledgers (so they had the means to raise an orphan). George Arnold was a "Gentleman of the Privy Chamber" (House of Lords) from 1730-1750, and a London alderman (1738-1740).

Willoughby was the focus for my earliest genealogy forays - I found that an Australian woman had keyed into a file on the internet the entire 1841 census for Willoughby. The Mormons have the parish register for St Nicholas on microfilm back to 1538, so I was ordering it to find my family's vital statistics. I made up dozens of family pages and entered all of the marriages, births and deaths on each family page for every family that had someone living in Willoughby in 1841 - many of the older folks were contemporaries of Prudence's family and the families the Ashes married into.

Our family was the only Ash family that ever lived in Willoughby, or attended any of the churches at the dozen or so nearby villages you could walk to (at least not in the villages whose registers are kept by the Mormons). So Prudence came from at least a little further away, and not from the nearest cities Rugby or Daventry, at least not leaving any online evidence. This gives me no clue as to the locale and origins of the Ash surname. It is clearly named after the tree - and the German equivalent Esch is also fairly common. The ash tree was prized in England, and if you Google Ash on English court records you will find dozens of court cases fought over inheritances of groves of ash trees.

The most common English county for the surname Ash is in Devon on the south coast, which makes one think the Ash ancestors came with the Normans. There are a few Ash families in Ireland, but it is quite an uncommon name there. Ash also has Anglo-Saxon origins, so it is possible the name dates back to before 1000AD when the Saxons occupied much of the eastern part of the Midlands. The name means near a grove of ash trees, so towns with Ash in their names often have woods of ash.

One theory is that the name was based on “The ancient and eminent family of Esse, Ashe, or D’Essecourt, which came over with William the Conqueror, appears by certified extracts under the seal of Ulster King of Arms, by the authority of the College of Arms, and from the pages of our old historians, to have held large estates in the county of Devon, so early as the eleventh century.”

The Rev. John Prince, in his “Worthies of Devon” (1810) links the names of Ash and Esse to the River Exe in Devon: “The very ancient and genteel stock of the name of Ash, otherwise Esse, derived its name, saith Mr. Hooker, from the River Esse, a more ancient compilation than Ex, by which it is called at present, as if this family was more ancient in this shire than the present name of the river, from which our famous city and several hamlets do fetch their pedigree, as Exeter, Exminster, and Exmouth.”

WILLOUGHBY HISTORY

Willoughby is a village and civil parish about 5 miles (8 km) south of Rugby, Warwickshire. The village is about 4.5 miles (7 km) northwest of Daventry in neighbouring Northamptonshire and the eastern boundary of the parish forms part of the county boundary. The parish is bounded to the south by the River Leam and to the west by one of its tributaries. The village is just west of the main road between Daventry and Coventry, now the A45 road. Willoughby derives from the old Norse word meaning "willow farmstead". In the Domesday Book of 1086 it is said to consist of five estates owned by Saxons, and one given to Norman baron Hugh de Grandmesnil.

For many years there were only five farms plus the Manor house farm surrounding Willoughby. The farmers tended to come from elsewhere, inheriting the lands from their aristocratic families - the Manor lands were controlled by Magdalene College in Oxford. The lands were used primarily to raise sheep - the only area in Europe where the climate was ideal for sheep. It was the wool industry that brought England much of its financial power in 17th-18th century - most of the parish churches were built with money from the wool trade. The farm laborers like my

family were housed on the land in tiny farm cottages, none of which have survived until today.

The town consisted of two major roads - Main St and Lower St - in the form of an "L", joined by roads to the main Rugby-Daventry road and the Oxford Canal, which was a major east-west Canal joining London to Liverpool. This canal was built in the 1760s when my grandfather James Ash was a teenager, so he would have been witness, or possibly even put to work building this major commercial thoroughfare. In addition to the Manor house and Vicarage there were two fine homes (Darts), a small row of shops on Main St near the new school, and the Rose Inn pub. There were also three other pubs - Navigation Inn on the Canal, Four Crosses at a cross-roads, and the New Inn, all of which had live-in servants.

When in 1216 the manor lord died without issue, the land was given to the Hospital at Oxford, which subsequently was rebuilt as Magdelene College in 1486 - all of the hospital's endowments, including the Manor in Willoughby, came under the ownership of Magdalene College, right into the twentieth century. The manor lands included an endowment for a local school in Willoughby, which was built in 1816. The prominent Clerke family occupied the manor in the 17th century. Sir Henry Clerke (1617-1687), son of Thomas Clerke of Willoughby, was a physician, and became president of Magdalene College in 1672.

From Richard Jackson, keeper of the Willoughby web-site, "The Lord of the Manor of Willoughby was the President & Fellows of Magdalen College, Oxford. As owners of the largest land holding the College's predecessor (The Hospital of St. John the Baptist without the East Gate, Oxford - a kind of Ecclesiastical hotel rather than a medical facility) acquired the manorial rights from the crown. In the 15th to mid-18th centuries the College leased the whole of the manor farm to one family who acted as the College's bailiff in the village exercising the manorial duties. Part of some of the leases was a requirement to provide accommodation for the College President and another for two days twice a year when manorial courts would take place. The College sold the lordship after they sold their estate in the village in the 1950s."

The parish church St Nicholas contains an ancient font from 1230 with early English Gothic carvings on its rim. The present church is a

perpendicular Gothic building dating from 1538, with a clock tower dating from early 17th century and a ring of six bells, cast in 1713. It contains a Clerke tomb and artifacts from the 1600s when that family was in the Manor.

The village has remained about the same size for centuries - being 398 in 2011 and 344 in 1841. Since 1248 to the 1830s the village was granted the right to hold a weekly market at Willoughby and a two-day annual fair at Whitsunday. With the market came the Court of Pie Powder, associated with the market, whose business included licensing hawkers and punishing acts of misdemeanour or nuisance. This became Pye Court, where my Willoughby guide Eric Palmer lives now.

Willoughby has been close by when several significant historical events occurred. The famous battle of Naseby (Northamptonshire) in which the main Royalist forces of King Charles I were decisively defeated by the larger Parliament New model army under Fairfax and Cromwell, took place on 14 Jun 1645, only 8 miles NE of Willoughby - the King's army had mustered the night before at Daventry. The ringleader of the Catholic sympathizers for Guy Fawkes' attempt to blow up Parliament on 5 Nov 1605 was Robert Catesby, of the nearby Catesby family at Ashley St Ledgers manor house. After Guy Fawkes was discovered with the huge gunpowder stash, the conspirators fled to Dunchurch (3 miles North of Willoughby), where they met in the Red Lion Inn (which we saw on our visit to Willoughby). They tried to raise enough troops to capture young Elizabeth I, but she was safely whisked away from Warwick. The conspirators were captured, and later executed by drawing and quartering.

JAMES BRUMAGE (BROMWICH) - EXECUTED ROBBER

Although I have so far been unable to prove the relationships to my family, I would like now to record a most heart-rending confession by a convicted stage coach robber James Brumage, which gives an idea of what it was like to live in the Midlands in the 1750s when my great great grandfather was orphaned. His family story happened in Willoughby, and I believe it likely that James was the unfortunate Uncle of my great great grandmother Mary Ash (Bromwich). Here is the account from the Nottingham Evening Post.

" An Account of the Lives, Trial, and Behavior of William Wainer and James Brumage, Who were executed on Nottingham Gallows, on Wednesday the 30th of July 1766, for a Foot-Pad-Robbery; with the genuine Confession of the latter, as delivered by Himself.

At the Assizes for the County of Nottingham, held on Monday the 14th of July 1766, before the Rt. Honorable Lord Camden, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, William Wainer and James Brumage, were indicted for robbing Mr. John Hall, (servant to Mr. Trotter Regiler at Durham) of thirty-two chiblings in gold and silver, and after a fair trial in which they behaved with great boldness, were capitally convicted, and received sentence of death -- His Lordship previous to this passing sentence upon the prisoners, in a most pathetic speech, earnestly exhorted them to prepare seriously for another World, for their crimes had been so notorious as rendered them improper objects of mercy, and they must fall a sacrifice to public justice. This reasonable advice made great impressions on the minds of the unhappy youths, particularly Brumage, who in good earnest resolved to make the best of the short time he had to live, and begged the assistance of a worthy divine; But Wainer declared himself a Papist, refused to attend the service of the Church, and requested the aid and affilance of a Catholic Priest who, it is said, finding him but little acquainted with the doctrines of the church of Rome, was not forward to attend him, and neglecting to visit him for several days, Wainer was prevailed on to accompany his fellow prisoner to church, where he behaved with decency, and seemed resolved to die in the Protestant religion; but the Thursday before he suffered, the priest paid him another visit ' and then Wainer declared his final resolution to die in the communion of the church of Rome. _ He obstinately refused to make a confession, but to God, the Saints, and Priest, and was very angry with Brumage for endeavouring to persuade him, nor would he give any account of his late past life, tho' much urged by the worthy gaoler and others; The Printer therefore, can say no more of him than giving the following short history of his life, gathered from the conversation of those who knew him."

"William Wainer, aged about 23 years, was born at Rouston, near Newark in Nottinghamshire; his father rented a small farm there and had several children; William was put apprentice at 12 years of age, to a Framework-knitter, at Woodborough, where he behaved well, and was a constant frequenter of the church of England; after his time was expired, he lived with Mr. Harris, a hosier in Nottingham, about three years; Here he behaved tolerably well, but falling in love with his master's daughter, and on account of some irregularities prudently refusing his addresses, he went to Coventry, and was employed by Mr. Clay, as a servant in the manufactory of that city. He declared to friend, that passing over Nottingham Meadows, when he set out first for Coventry, he then was determined never to return into Nottinghamshire unless it was to be hanged for that he could not be happy again, nor did he care what course of life he led -- strange as this absurd resolution may appear, it was but too soon put into practice, for he had not been long in the service of Mr. Clay, before he was violently suspected of defrauding his master, of divers parcels of silk, and was committed to gaol, but at the last Lent Assize, acquitted for want of evidence; How he spent his time after his discharge from prison will appear by reading the following annexed confession of James Brumage, whose whole behaviour has been very different from that of Wainer, being patiently resigned to his approaching change, behaving in every respect as became one in his unhappy circumstances, and at last dying with a truly Christian fortitude, desiring the prayers of all present, and departing this life in the 22nd year of his age:"

"I, James Brumage, being in a few hours to suffer a shameful death, and appear before that God to whom all secrets are open, think it my duty before I launch into eternity, to give this following genuine account of my life and actions, to ease my conscience, and clear such innocent persons who may be suspected of those crimes, I or my wicked companions were guilty of:

I was born at Willoughby, in Warwickshire ; my father was a publican there and had 5 children, which he endeavoured to bring up to business in a creditable manner; but providence deprived us of our dear Parents, when I was just ten years old; my mother was buried one Sunday, my brother the next, and my father the Sunday following, in the year 1755; thus we lost three dear relations within 15 days of each other, who left

me, and four other children orphans. My father on his death bed, requested Mr. Bonnington, a butcher of the same town, his friend, to take care of his children and effects, which he promised to do; A little before he expired, I being his favourite child, he sent for me to his chamber, and bid me take care of a leather purse, which he took from under his garment into my hand which purse contained about 45 pounds, with a strict charge to tell nobody. Soon after my poor father's death, Mr. Bonnington took possession of the house and business, but proved a careless man, and tho' I was very young, I thought it better to keep the money than give it him; In about one year after, he died, but in that short time wasted the greatest part of my Father's substance, and though there were still a few valuable effects he left, which if properly applied, might have offered some relief to the poor children, for want of a will, which my father should have made, all was left; however, some kind friends (empowered my care?) and I was happily placed under the care of Mr. Lowke, a Farmer and Grazier of the same village, with whom I lived with much comfort and reputation until I was 18, constantly attending the Duty of my Place, and making it my daily care, to please both God and Man. _ From this place I was recommended to live with Mr. Crosley, an eminent Wine-Cooper at Coventry, with whom I stays one year; Then I lived with Mr. King of the same city, and continued in service six months: Then I removed to live with Mr. Lowke, an eminent Banker at Coventry, whom I served in the capacity of Footman, & had good wages, and lived with unblemished reputation for one year, but having been tempted into the company of a loose woman, I contracted a disorder which was attended with very fatal consequences; for at the same time I had an unlawful intimacy with a young girl, a favourite servant in my master's family; The unhappy secret was discovered, and I with shame discharged that service, I was no longer worthy of. My character stained and my mind stung with remorse for my past conduct, I rambled about for near a quarter of a year, and that very period my last master was robbed of a sum of money; I was charged with this robbery, but appeal to heaven for witness to my innocence; My master suspecting I was the thief, had me seized and carried before Mr. Alderman Hewitt, who after searching and taking from me, eighteen pounds sixteen shillings and three half-pence, and a silver watch, which I bought and paid for, and a gold ring, which I honestly came by, with a view to marry the girl on whom I had place my affections' committed me to Coventry gaol, where I was confined with an heart almost broke with grief, having no real

friend: to pity or assist me, tho' innocent of the crime for which I was imprisoned. --- At the last Spring assizes, I was discharged, after having been confined forty-five weeks.

In this gaol, I unhappily contracted an acquaintance with the following prisoners, one Peers a Roman Catholic, confined for debt (who made a proselyte of Wainer) and is now under sentence of death at Warwick for a robbery; with Wainer himself, Charged with robbing his masters, Messrs Clay of Coventry of a considerable quantity of silk, which he sold for half value, to devers persons whose names I know not ; with one Pestel a Butcher, charged with Felony, and now under sentence at Warwick, for transportation. ---Let the World judge how dangerous such companions must be for a young man of little experience like me! The consequences were terrible and the sequel truly dreadful --- but my conscience was not so far hardened as to enter on their schemes of robbing all at once for after we were discharged from gaol, Wainer and Peers, contrary to my advice, stopped a stage coach, in the latter end of April near Coventry, and got a little money and a gold watch; This success fatally induced me to join them, and being furnished with a pistol, I, Wainer, And W.Peers, stopped and robb'd the Chester coach, about 11 o'clock at night, in the beginning of May, and took from the passengers about thirty shillings and another gold watch. The morning after, Peers left us, and went to his own house at Coventry; The next night, I and Wainer robbed another stage coach, of one pound four shillings; then went to the Unicorn in Coventry, and there stayed all night and spent the money. The next night we robbed two stage coaches, about two miles from Coventry, and got about four pounds more, and returned to the same house. --- We now judged it high time to leave that country, and my companion Wainer thought Nottinghamshire a good place for action : We arrived at Nottingham town on Tuesday the 20th of May, and took a room of one Mr Egleston there (but he was a stranger to our scheme). We stayed at Nottingham two or three days, and cash growing short, Wainer pawned the gold watch to a barber there, for half a guinea, The day after we robbed a coach going out for London, and took from the passengers, twenty-two shillings. --- We lay in the fields after the robbery, and in the morning returned to Leicester. The same day we reached Nottingham, and went to our lodgings; where we rested well after our great fatigues. Sunday we spent great part of our time at a public house in the Market-place, leading to the Castle; lay at our

lodgings that night, and Wainer having some particular reason, that I am a stranger to, to expect a good booty in the Forest, we set out in the morning, but nothing offered; and here I declare in the most serious manner, that had we met with the success expected, I was fully resolved to leave off this dangerous abandoned way of living, and get over to France, and there if possible, live by industry and improve myself in gardening; but Providence ordered it otherwise; about noon we stopped and robbed Mr. John Hall of Durham, of thirty-two shillings, and a leather pouch, and then set off across the Forest, for Woodborough, where we were in great danger of being taken, but behaving boldly escaped, and after a painful journey thro' bye-ways arrived safe at a little village near the Trent sine, about two miles East of Nottingham; went once more to our lodgings at Nottingham, and ventured three times to walk thro' the streets there, at the time the public advertisements were dispersing against us. ---- Wainer redeemed the watch he had pawned, and then we let out to see our companions at Coventry; the advertisements followed close at our heels and we easily perceived our danger to be very great indeed. --- And here let my reader, whoever thou art, warn thee to flee from the first temptations to sin against God, and the laws of thy country; for surely no life is so wretched, so miserable, as that of a Foot-Pad; living as we did, for the space of about one month in constant fatigue, fear and danger; with an almost certain prospect of the gallows, spending what little we obtained by plunder and raving, in riot and folly, and drinking to excess to stifle the pangs of a guilty conscience, and the dread of a justly offended Deity --- We spent our time very imprudently at Coventry, fearful of discovery, we kept close in the daytime at our lodgings; but at last determined to cross over into Shropshire; we set out on Tuesday evening, and lay at a public House on the road, where we were betrayed, and taken that night in bed, unarmed, tho' we might have escaped, if Wainer had not opened the door, for it was very dark, and the chamber window only four feet from the ground, --- We were carried the next morning to Coventry, and there committed to the city gaol, where we were confined 'till removed to Nottingham assize, there tried on Monday the 14th of July for the robbery committed on Sherwood Forest, and convicted on the evidence of Mr. Hall, the prosecutor, for which we are now made public examples, and hope the wretched conclusion of our wicked lives, may warn all young men from pursuing such horrid practices as have brought us to an untimely end.

The facts I have related are all the crimes of a public nature, I have been guilty of; these and many more of a less heinous sort I do most heartily and most sincerely repent of; I have asked, and I humbly hope to obtain pardon of the Almighty, thro' the merits of his dear Son who has declared in the Gospel, that. *That there is more joy in Heaven over the Sinner that repenteth than over ninety and nine just Persons that need no repentance.*

But before I go out of the World I think it necessary, and do as a dying man declare myself innocent of the charge of robbing my late master, Mr. Lowke, Banker at Coventry, nor had I any connection with nor do I know any person that did rob him. The Money found in my possession, and taken from me by the Magistrates, at my commitment, was my own private property, the remaining part of the money left me by my dying father. This I formally declare, is the real truth, as I shall in short time answer to God, and expect everlasting punishment if they be false; I therefore request, entreat and hope, that this money, with my watch and gold ring in whoever's possession factor? they now are, may be given into the hands of Mr. Bonnington, Gaoler, at Nottingham, to be by him paid to my disconsolate sister, Mary Brumage now a Servant or lately to, with Mr. John Shaw at Willoughby in Warwickshire; and this my dying request, I trust in God will be complied with.

I have but few lines more to add, and these are to return my most humble thanks to the Right Hon. Lord Camden, for his impartial love of Justice on my trial, the pathetic moving speech he made on passing sentence; and to the Rev. Divine who kindly attended and supported me with his spiritual advice and comfort, while under condemnation; and to Mr. and Mrs. Bonnington who have behaved with great tenderness and Christian compassion eer since I was removed to Nottingham Goal, where the lenity I have met with was such as demand my poor thanks, which beg they will accept from the dying JAMES BRUMAGE
.....Nottingham Gaol, July 29, 1766"

There is no doubt that James' family lived in Willoughby - the St Nicholas parish register records show two generations of Bromwicks. James was born on 26 May 1745 and had two older brothers Richard (25 Dec 1741) and John (b. 12 Dec 1742), and a younger daughter Mary (b. 19 Jul 1747), and Thomas (b. 19 Jan 1755), who died with the parents Thomas and Catherine Bromwick in the two weeks from 22 Feb 1756 to 7 Mar 1756. Thomas was born in May 1713 to William & Catherine Bromwick in

Willoughby. The only later parish register entry for the Bromwich surname was the death of Mary in 27 Feb 1823 - apparently unmarried - let us hope that she did receive James' bequest upon his execution in 1766.

The Bonnington family is spelled Boddington in the parish register. There were several Boddington families in the early 1700s. Edward Boddington was born in 1735 to parents Thomas & Ann, and was married and had his 7 children from 1759 to 1770. Robert Boddington was probably his older brother - he was married to Prudence and had two children Edward and Robert in 1752 and 1755. Robert is probably the guardian of the Bromwich orphans and ran Thomas Bromwich's pub shortly after his death. His death was recorded on 27 May 1757, which agrees with James' narrative.

It is highly likely that both my GGGrandfather James Ash and his second wife, my GGGrandmother Mary Bromwich, widow of Richard Marlow were somehow connected to the Boddingtons, but how, I have been unable to prove. Mary was born about 1769, according to her death record in 1851 at the age of 82. James' two older brothers Richard and John probably were working and living outside Willoughby when their parents died - they were 14 and 13, ages when most were working a trade or as a servant or farm laborer. Either could have had my Mary, as they would have been 27 and 26 at the time of her birth, but an exhaustive search of all the parish registers in neighbouring towns turned up no baptismal record. There are numerous Bromwich or Bromwich families nearby, including a large family in Crick, NTH, about 12 miles distant, and others in Rugby and near Daventry. It seems likely that our Mary was named after her aunt Mary Bromwich (1747-1823).

What would have brought our Prudence Ash to Willoughby? Well, one possibility is for work, and where are you most likely to have opportunities for making babies out of wedlock? -- how about working in a pub where strangers are passing through. She could have been a barmaid in Mr. Bromwich's pub, which might have led to some willingness to look after her children on the part of the pub owner, and later of his friend Boddington, two of the few in town who weren't poor farm laborers. Another possibility is a sympathetic relative. Prudence is quite an uncommon name, so isn't it possible she was named after an Aunt - maybe Prudence Boddington? So she or her brother-in-law Edward

Boddington may have had some sympathy to raising both the Ash and Bromwick orphans. And that would have made James and Mary attractive to each other when their spouses both died around 1800.

It would be nice to someday prove some of these theories, but in the mean-time it is fun to speculate, no?

MY GREAT GREAT GRANDPARENTS FIRST MARRIAGES

It is very rare to have only five generations of a family between 1750 and 2000 - but that is what happened to my Ash family, as both my GGGrandfather and my Grandfather, both James Ash, had second families late in life, which led to my birth in 1942, almost 200 years after the birth of my great great grandfather James Ash. We are five generations of James Ashes.

James Ash the most senior was married to Mary Howkins on 25 Nov 1770 - the Vicar of St Nicholas at that time was Henry Homer. It is notable that James signed his own name - clearly he received some education, not common for most farm laborers. It is also notable that one of his witnesses was Edward Boddington, who also signed his own name. One of Robert Boddington's children was named Edward, but he would have been only 18 - more likely it was Robert's brother Edward, who may well have supported Robert's wife Prudence and children, and perhaps also my great great Grandfather.

Mary was the widow of William Howkins. They were married on 18 Nov 1760 in St Nicholas - her maiden name is Watson, which puts her in one of the oldest and largest families in early Willoughby life.

THE WATSON FAMILY

George Watson was the deacon who wrote out the oldest parish register of St Nicholas, which began in 1625. The large Watson family was being recorded in the 1500s in neighbouring Ashby St Ledgers just 3 miles away, across the Northamptonshire border. It is likely that there are

missing parish registers for St Nicholas, as it was said to have been built in 1538. This may prevent us from following Mary's line back to George Watson and his contemporaries. In the 1700s there are Watsons recorded in the two intervening villages Grandborough NTH and Barby NTH.

In the Willoughby register we are able to establish that Mary's parents were Thomas (1703-1765) and Elizabeth (-1781) Watson, and she was baptised on 12 Mar 1738. James Ash (GGGF) was a witness to the wedding of Richard Watson, who was probably Mary's brother baptised on 12 Dec 1742. The parents of the only Thomas Watson of the correct age in Willoughby and surrounding towns was Robert (1669-1715) who was married to Elinor. This far back there were no marriage registers, so we only know the wives names from the baptisms of their children (no maiden names). By similar logic, the only possible parents for Robert were John & Jillie Watson. Here we reach a dead end, as there are no John Watson births or deaths that would have him with children born in 1669.

There is a George Watson who married Mary Atkins in Ashby St Ledgers in 1599, but I can find neither his birth, nor his childrens' baptisms - they could have been in the missing St Nicholas registers 1538-1625. The only family baptising children in St Nicholas after 1625 was Walter & Joane who had a son Robert in 1639. John could have been a brother of Robert, and grandson of George, but it seems unlikely that the church warden would fail to baptise his own grandson John.

One of the Ashby St Ledgers Watson families (John & Catherine) had a girl named Anne in 1619 - she was probably the one who became famous by marrying the Lord of the Manor and President of Magdalene College in Oxford - Henry Clerke - in 1638. That John's family was having children up to 1627, but not a John. So we are left without being able to trace Mary Watson's family back to the sixteenth century.

The prolific Watson clan had dozens of families in Willoughby, Barby, Wolfhamcote, Grandborough and Ashby St Ledgers in the 1700s, all within a few miles of each other. However, by 1841 there was only one Watson living in Willoughby - a 60 year old boatman, William Watson. By the time of Mary's death in 1799, the Watson clan either died out, or more likely decamped en masse for other parts.

THE BOATMEN HOWKINS

The Oxford Canal was built in 1769-1779 through Willoughby, and was to become the first canal route linking Birmingham and the Midlands to London. This was the major way of moving commercial products and coal in England, and was very busy and profitable. Teams of horses would pull the barges from the sides of the canal, overseen by the so-called boatmen. The major section was between Napton Junction and Braunston - with the northern route through Willoughby moving on to Hillmorton, Rugby and Coventry where it could join the Midlands canal system to get to Birmingham and Liverpool. The southern section from Napton goes through Banbury and Oxford to join the Thames River, and down to London. The canals were also used to move passengers, and today they are much appreciated by leisure boaters enjoying canal boat vacations.

Thirty years later a rival canal company built a more direct route from London to Birmingham - the Grand Union Canal. This canal had to use the Oxford Canal section from Napton to Braunston to link up, and had to pay handsomely for the privilege. Braunston, some five miles from Willoughby, became a key transfer point, and many of the boatmen piloting the barges chose to make it their home base. There were always a few boatmen who raised their families a few miles away in Willoughby.

James Ash' step-son Thomas Howkins was Mary Watson's only child from her first marriage. He married Frances Cox on 19 Jun 1784 in Willoughby, and they had eight children, including Thomas Jr. born in 1789. James Ash (GGGFather) continued to be close to his step-grandson, who was living in the neighbouring cottage in 1824 (land tax list). He had married Ann Masters in 1815, and they had four children, the youngest being daughter Elizabeth born about 1836. James Ash would have seen the birth of two children named Susannah, the first having died as a baby, before his death in 1828. Thomas Jr became a boatman.

He was not enumerated on the 1841 census, but that is fairly common for boatmen, who are frequently away from home at the time of the census. His family was probably in Braunston. His daughter Elizabeth was married to Emmanuel Smith in Hardingstone Northamptonshire on 12 Jul 1852 - he is a well researched boatman whose descendants were

canal boat owners and boatmen for three generations. Their story is told at

http://www.virtualwaterways.co.uk/the_story_of_the_smith_family.html

Excerpts are:

"Peter's son Emmanuel Smith also worked as a boatman. Baptised at Brinklow on 8 June 1828, evidence reveals that he later married Eliza Howkins at St Edmunds Church in Hardington, Northamptonshire on 12 July 1852. Their marriage certificate reveals that at this time they were living at Cotton End where the Northampton Arm of the Grand Junction Canal meets up with River Nene. Eliza was also descendent from a boating family, her father Thomas Howkins from Willoughby, Warwickshire also being employed as a boatman.

The 1851 census reveals that Emmanuel Smith started off work as a boatman; on the census he was moored at Higgins Wharf in Northampton with his brother Peter. It is interesting to note that the brother's ages on this census have been wrongly recorded. Just below on the same page of the census are Eliza Howkins and her father Thomas moored at Adnett Wharf. By 1881, we discover that Emmanuel is now a boat owner with boats registered at Hinckley. He now has a wharf at Braunston in Northamptonshire and carries coal from the Moira Collieries to Northampton. This is confirmed by the evidence of the 1881 census, where we find Eliza Smith at home in Braunston, her occupation being coal merchant; Emmanuel is on a boat on the Ashby Canal at Stoke Golding Wharf.

From death announcement cards we are able to discover that Eliza Smith died aged 60 in 1895 and was buried at Braunston, while Emmanuel died in 1900 aged 72 and was also buried at Braunston."

THE MARLOW FAMILY

Mary Bromwich, niece of the murderer James Brumage (see above), was married to Richard Marlow on Dec 16, 1887 in St Nicholas. He came from an early Willoughby family - his parents were John (1732-1769)

and Elizabeth Marlo. John's birth and death were recorded in the St Nicholas parish register. Richard (1765-1799) and Mary had three children - Richard Jr's birth came in 1795, a year after their first son Richard had died in infancy. They also had a younger daughter Elizabeth, who died as a five year old child, four years after the death of her father in 1799. Their surviving son Richard (1795-1864) was married to Hannah, and lived his life as a farm labourer in Willoughby, apparently without having any children.

Mary Ash (Watson), first wife of my GGGrandfather James Ash, also passed away in 1799. It is quite possible that James and Mary Bromwich had known each other when Mary was a child - she could have been raised by the same family that had raised James - possibly the Boddingtons. In any case, they joined forces in 1803. In their marriage parish record, James signed his name, while Mary signed with an X, as did friend and witness Richard Crupper.

Richard Marlow's grand niece Jane (1812-1878) was to become my Great Grandmother when she married James and Mary's son James Ash in 1837. Richard had an older brother John Marlow, who married Ann Butler in 1785, and had five children. The three girls Jane, Ester and Sarah either died young, or married elsewhere, but the eldest son William was to become the last of this Marlow family to live his whole life in Willoughby. William married Mary in 1834, and they had a daughter Jane on 16 Aug 1812, who was to become my great grandmother. After his wife's death, he lived next to my great grandparents - both William and James (Jim) survived their wives deaths and were still farm laborers into their old age, passing away in 1872 and 1888 respectively.

THE SHOEMAKERS - ASH-WARRENS OF LONG BUCKBY

James Ash and Mary Howkins (Watson) had four children in the 1770s in Willoughby. James, the eldest son, didn't survive his mother's death in 1799, as his name was re-used in James' second marriage, leading to our line down to me. He probably died young, as often the deaths of children aren't in the early parish registers. He would have been of fighting age if he lived to an adult, so it is possible that he lost his life in the beginnings

of the Napoleonic Wars. Elizabeth, born 1775 doesn't appear later in the Willoughby register, so may have died young or married elsewhere. Younger son William didn't survive infancy (1777-1778).

The only child to marry in Willoughby was the elder daughter Mary Ash, who married Samuel Warren from Long Buckby Northamptonshire on 5 Dec 1803. He apparently took his bride home, as Mary and Samuel had two children in Long Buckby - Lydia born about 1806 and David born about 1809. Long Buckby is about ten miles from Willoughby, and after 1815 could be reached by canal when the Grand Union Canal was completed. There is a web-site for Long Buckby at

<http://www.longbuckby.net/villagefamilyhistory.htm>,

and the following history is taken from the history section of this web-site.

LONG BUCKBY HISTORY

Long Buckby is a largeish town, about 1000 or so, with a shoemaking cottage industry and a full complement of trades – tailor, hatter, coal merchant, innkeeper, lawyer, brewer, butcher, blacksmith, basket maker etc. as well as farmers and farm workers. It is half way between Rugby and Northampton, about ten miles east of Willoughby, and six miles NE of Daventry.

The Early Years

Long Buckby as a village is probably at least 1000 years old. The name is of Scandinavian origin, the 'by' meant farmstead and the first part comes from a personal name such as 'Bucca'. By the time of the Domesday Book (1086 A.D.) the manor of 'Bucebi' had been given to Norman nobles and in the mid 12th century one of these, Sahir de Quincy, built a castle here. The castle mound has survived and is signposted off Station Road.

In 1281 the lord of the manor, Henry de Lacy, applied to the King for a charter to hold a weekly market and two annual fairs. This was granted and a new market place was laid out where it is to-day. At this time the villagers must have begun to move their homes from the original site by

the stream in the area now known as Salem, up to the new market place. The parish church was also built about this time and parts of the modern church are original.

For much of the Middle Ages the manor was held by important noblemen such as the Earls of Winchester and Lincoln. They owned a lot of property in other places and were not resident here. As a result Long Buckby became an 'open' village and over time families were able to move into the village. Initially they may have come as squatters but eventually set up permanent homes. This probably explains how the road from the main village to the nearby hamlet of 'Coten' became settled. It also explains how Buckby became known as Long Buckby and Coten became Coten End. These changes of name occurred during the Tudor period. The change of Coten End to Cotton End came later but had nothing directly to do with textiles.

The Coming of Industry

The presence of large numbers of people in the village eking out a living with little or no land made it an ideal place for industry to take hold. In the late 17th Century the East Anglian woollen industry spread into Northamptonshire, and Long Buckby became a centre of weaving and, particularly, of woolcombing. For nearly a century the industry flourished although with occasional periods of depression, but by 1800 it had begun a decline from which it was never to recover. Industrialisation was bringing changes and the woollen trade was becoming concentrated in the north and the west country.

After a period of real poverty, the boot and shoe trade, strong in Northampton and growing in Daventry, came to the village. A number of entrepreneurs tried their luck here and for 150 years, Long Buckby was to be an important footwear manufacturing village. It also became a busy canal wharf after the Grand Junction Canal and the Leicester arm were opened during the first 15 years of the 19th century.

The Radical Village

The tradition of absorbing incomers, the periods of serious poverty and the presence of many people working in industry and not on the land, gave rise to a village very radical in its politics and favouring the non-

conformist churches. The Chartist movement was strong here in the 1830s and 1840s. A few years later (1858) the first co-operative society in Northamptonshire was set up and was to become a major influence in the village. In the mid 19th century there were three chapels which, between them, attracted more than four times as many in their congregations as attended the Church of England. Perhaps this explains why I have been unable to find Samuel Warren's baptism in the local parish register.

THE NORTHAMPTONSHIRE SHOE-MAKING INDUSTRY.

The association between Northampton and shoemaking dates back to the 15th Century, when the 1452 Assizes regulated prices and weights for various trades included cordwainers (medieval name for shoemakers):

"The Assize of a Cordwainer is that he make no manner of shoes nor boots but of good neats leather and that it be thoroughly tanned."

Northampton's access to the raw materials necessary to shoemaking was guaranteed by the large cattle market held in the town. Its central location also enabled a wide distribution network to be established; as a result shoemaking developed into the town's major industry. By 1642, there were enough shoemakers in Northampton to secure a very large order.

In that year, a group of 13 shoemakers, led by Thomas Pendleton, obtained a contract for 600 pairs of boots and 4,000 pairs of shoes to be used to equip the army going to Ireland. The existence of the order is known to us because the shoemakers had difficulty getting paid for their work and were still complaining about non-payment in 1651. In the Civil War Northampton took the side of the Parliamentarians, and made most of the soldiers boots - Charles I was unhappy and burned a large part of the town.

In the 1850s the boot and shoe trade, strong in Northampton and growing in Daventry, came to the village. A number of entrepreneurs tried their luck here and for 150 years Long Buckby was to be an important footwear manufacturing village. So enmeshed in the life of the

town was shoe-making that the local football club was called the Cobblers - in 1841 over 43% of adult males were involved in making shoes.

Long Buckby has long been known for high class hand-sewn footwear, particularly long boots for horse riders. The skill of these craftspeople also meant that Long Buckby was the place to have bespoke and surgical footwear made. Its shoemakers have several times made the news as the only people able to make size 18 army boots or a pair of first shoes for larger children.

Long Buckby Shoes Limited had a large factory employing many local people, but much of the work was carried out in workshops in people's back gardens. Clickers cut the uppers in one workshop and were passed on to be sewn in another then delivered to be welted in a third. Shoes passed round the community and were delivered to the factory for finishing at the end of the process.

Although all the shoe factories had closed by the year 2000, there were still men in the village who could make a pair of shoes in their own homes. Many of the houses in the village still have the workshops used by these skilled shoemakers at the end of their garden.

When shoe-making became mechanized in 1857 in Northampton, and later in Daventry, there was great resistance to working in the factories, as families were attached to running their own business at their own pace while employing most of their family members. The shoe-making families were more educated than other workers because of the exacting standards required, and were able to put up a good fight, so good that some factories reserved some steps of the process to be outsourced to local families. In the 1860s Crocket & Jones produced quality shoes for export around the world, getting its shoes to market in the Midlands canal system to Liverpool. In 1871 Charles Goodyear invented the Goodyear welt process for securing the top to the sole, and their shoes were considered the highest quality in the world.

In the late 1800s shoe exports were generating over a million pound sterling per year for the people and factories in Northamptonshire. Long Buckby was only one of many towns who built their own lasts and

equipment in their homes - Wollaston became famous for its Doc Martens boots.

THE MARY WARREN (ASH) DESCENDANTS

Into the middle of this shoe-making culture, Samuel brought his new bride Mary Ash in 1803. Mary was over 30, so they only had three children - Lydia in 1806, William about 1808, and David in 1809. However, David was to raise a large shoe-making family in Long Buckby, and so far I have been able to find 137, mainly using the English Census records in Find Your Past. These censuses have been saved in a WORD document "Warren-Warwick-Letts Censuses" - we will discuss mainly the first two generations from David, outlined below in the table of contents of the census document:

Lydia Bradshaw (Warren)

David Warren family 1810-

Samuel Haddon Warren family (1833-)

Jophias Warren family (1838-)

Ann Haddon Warren (1876-)

William Walter Warren (1871-)

Gertrude Amelia Warren

Ann Hill (Warren) 1839- and her 3 children

Frances Letts (Warren) 1842-1897 and her 9 children

Mary Ash is the daughter of James Ash my GGGfather's first marriage to Mary Watson. Her birth and marriage to Samuel Warren are recorded in the St. Nicholas parish register in Willoughby in 1803, the same year in which her father married my great great grandmother. In 1841 the only Samuel Warren in Warwickshire or Northamptonshire is in Long Buckby, about 12 miles east of Willoughby, and his wife is Mary. This is strong evidence (but not certainty) that this is our Mary. There is some

uncertainty, as her age of 60 in the 1841 census (an estimate within 5 yrs) is slightly out of range of her birth date in 1774. Samuel is also shown as 60 in 1841.

Samuel was a shoemaker, eventually becoming a master shoemaker employing four, probably including his two sons. There is no evidence that William ever married – he is living and working with his father (a widower, Mary having passed away) in 1851 at the age of 42, unmarried. Lydia married John Bradshaw in 1845 at the age of 37, and had one son Samuel in 1850 – they lived next to David's two shoemaker children Samuel and Jophias in 1851 in Long Buckby.

Lydia Bradshaw (Warren) married John Bradshaw in Long Buckby in 1845. John is described as a House Proprietor, and later a Mallster - possibly he was running an ale house. They have only one child - Samuel, born in 1850. John outlived Lydia, and is shown living with his son Samuel and his wife in 1881 at the age of 86 - Lydia was alive with John in Long Buckby in 1871. Samuel was a railwayman, and he and his wife lived in Coalville, Ashby de la Zouch, Leicestershire from 1881-1911, having two children Emily (1879) and Samuel (1885). Emily was a servant in Coalville in 1901, and is not found in the 1911 census – Samuel is still unmarried and living at home in Coalville in 1911. I have searched the following decades for their marriages, but the name is common, and there are no marriages for them in Leicestershire. The most likely marriage is of Emily to William Carwardine in Daventry (Braunston) in 2 Qtr 1905 (3B/237), but there are dozens of other possibilities.

Most of Mary's descendants came through her son. **David Warren** in 1841 is married to Frances Haddon (a widow) with two step-children Samuel (1832) and Mary (1830); and his first three children Lydia (1835), Josiah (1838) and Ann (1840) with an unknown first wife. Like his father, he was a shoemaker, and they lived only 10-12 houses away from his parents in Long Buckby. By 1851 there were three more children Frances (1842), Thomas (1849) and David (1850). By this time they had a fully operating shoe-making facility, and David, his wife Frances and eldest step-son Samuel are all described as journeymen shoemakers, with Josiah being a Shoemaker. By 1861, David has died, but Frances is carrying on the shoe-making business, with her younger children Frances and Thomas H working as shoe closer and shoe maker,

and many of her daughters and their husbands assisting in the shoemaking business.

Poor **Samuel Haddon Warren** had a tough life - he lost his dad when he was about 5, took up his step-dad David's shoe-making work, got married to Sarah Grant (Gilbert) and lost his wife possibly before they had any children, then had to move away to Warwick to find his second wife Emma Davis, whose mother was born in Long Buckby. Then I lose the whole family, including Emma's parents John and Ruth Davis, for 1891-1911, but their daughter Fanny, born in 1880, is living with her Aunt Fanny Butler (Emma's sister) in Handsworth, Birmingham - from 1891 to 1911, so probably Samuel died before 1891.

Josiah Warren started out making shoes with his father at the age of 13, and continued this work in his youth, when he married Ann Haddon in 1859 at the age of 23 (she was 19). She was probably related to Josiah's mother's first husband - her father James was likely his brother. It is likely that Ann's grandparents Thomas and Sarah Haddon, who were living in Long Buckby in 1841 next to one of their sons William were also parents to George who lived in Norton, Long Buckby and to Frances Warren's first husband.

After Josiah and Ann started having children, he became a railwayman - first a pointman in Long Buckby, and by 1881, he had been promoted to station master at Spratton railway station, in Lilford cum Wigsworth, northeast of Northampton. He and his family lived in the station house from 1881 to after 1901 - probably until their deaths before 1911. They had five children - Ann Haddon, William Walter, Gertrude Amelia, Sarah Elizabeth and Ernest Arthur between 1867 and 1877, all born in Long Buckby.

Their eldest daughter **Ann Haddon Warren** was born in 1867 and lived with her parents until they passed away sometime after 1901. She suffered from epilepsy, and in 1911 was a patient in the St. Elizabeth's home and School for Epileptics - The Convent, Much Hadham, Bishop's Stortford, Hertsfordshire (census saved in Ash family pictures). Amazingly, it still exists today, and has a website

<http://www.stelizabeths.org.uk/>. Her aunt Mary Warwick lived in Bishop's Stortford, so that may be how she came to be in this facility.

The eldest son **William Walter Warren** was born in 2Qtr 1870. He moved to Nottingham to take a job as a railway clerk before 1891, and married Elizabeth Emma Oldfield from Nottingham in 1894. He worked for the railway as a canvasser in 1901-1911, and had moved to nearby West Bridgford by 1911. They had four children, all born in Nottingham. Annie was born in 1895, and was a clerk/typist in 1911, living at home.

Now let's return to Josiah's third, and perhaps most interesting child **Gertrude Amelia Lovell (Warren)**, because she and her husband were both in service in grand houses. She was born in Long Buckby in 1872, and lived there for 6-8 years before her family moved twenty miles away to Spratton station house. Her future husband Joseph Lovell was also born in Long Buckby in 1869, so it is likely they met at an early age – either as neighbors, or in school. In 1891 she was working in a manor house in Burton Latimer as a nursemaid to Charles Bartlett, a clerk in holy orders – that is about 12 miles east of Long Buckby, closer to Northampton. The Manor House was owned at the time by Rev. F. B. Newman – the local Burton Latimer heritage society provides a picture and interesting history of the Manor House and adjoining Church [Burton Latimer Manor House](#). In 1901 she was working as a domestic nurse in Portland House, Leicester for William Raven – a hosiery manufacturer. Portland House is a lovely mansion now being used as a residential care home – you can see a picture on Google Maps (Portland House, Leicester).

Meanwhile, Joseph's parents James and Mary Ann Lovell had moved to Leicester in 1881. They did not have more children, and in fact, may have lost their older daughter – as their son-in-law is living with them. I don't find Joseph or his parents in any censuses in 1891 or 1901 despite tracking down the other Joseph who was born in Northamptonshire around the same time and proving he wasn't our Joseph. My guess is that they moved to Scotland, as this is where we find Gertrude and Joseph's children being born during 1901-1911. There are also no births in England for their names/dates – confirming their children were born outside England

They are married in 1910 in Leicester, and in the 1911 census they are shown in Leicester with three children born in Scotland – Marjorie (1903) and Louie (1905) born in Dunbar, Haddingtonshire (SW of Edinburgh); and Edith (1908) born in Forfichen, Linlithgowshire. They had no children after 3Q 1911. Their address in 1911 was 16 Francis St, Leicester, which looks like it has been rebuilt as a row of shops with flats over top. He was working as a domestic coachman – probably not at Portland House, as it is 7 miles away on the opposite side of town.

Jophias' other two children Ernest and Sarah seem not to have had children.

Two of David Warren's children Mary and Thomas seem to have had no children, and one, Lydia, died as a young child. However, two of Jophias' sisters and his youngest brother all had families.

Ann Warren married John Hill, born in London, in 1858. He worked as a shoemaker for Ann's mother, who was running the business after her father passed away. I think he may have come to the Northampton area with his maternal aunt Elizabeth Collyer, whose husband and children were all in the shoemaking business – in 1851 he was living in the Hare&Hounds pub in Woodnewton which was run by his probable grandmother Mary Goodyer.

Ann passed away before 1871, when John was living in Long Buckby as a widower with three young daughters – Eva, Ann and Jane. By 1881 John too is gone, and **Eva Hill** has married William York from Northampton – both living in Long Buckby and in the shoe making business. Young Jane is living with them, aged 17. They have three children Ellen, Richard and Annie. By 1911 Richard has married a widow with two stepchildren and moved to near Leicester in a railway job – perhaps due to their grandmother's step-brother who worked there on the railway, or to her mother's first cousin Ann who was in the epilepsy hospital there. Annie has married another bootmaker – Bertram Townsend, and has a young family in Long Buckby (no more children were found after 1912). I'm not sure what happened to Ellen – I couldn't find her or her marriage.

Ann Charlotte Hill married yet another shoemaker Alfred Clues in 1884 and lived in Long Buckby next door to his brother's family through 1911. They have no children, and both work on making shoes.

Jane Lydia Hill is last enumerated in 1881 – I tried finding her marriage or existence in any later census, but was unsuccessful.

So, it looks like Ann Warren and all of her daughters and granddaughters married shoemakers and stayed in Long Buckby. Only grandson Richard York has moved away to Leicester to work in the railways, and only two grandchildren have survived 1911 in Long Buckby.

Note that her half-brother **Thomas Haddon Warren** is last found in a census in 1871 with his sister Frances Letts. There is another Thomas Warren in Daventry who was married in 1870, but he was born in Weedon. I assume he died between 1871 and 1881, or left England.

David Warren Jr was with his parents working as a butchers boy in 1861. In 1871 he is living with his half brother Samuel, and near his other brothers and sisters in Long Buckby, now a butcher. In 1873 he married Annie Bounds and lived in Wellingsborough, Northamptonshire. He worked on the railways, first as a fireman, than as an engine driver, and raised his family there. Two of his children Harry and Caroline apparently didn't marry (at least not before 40), and lived at home through 1911. Harry was a butcher, and Caroline a dressmaker.

His son William worked as a linotype printer for a newspaper in Worcester – he returned home to marry Florence Benner in 1901, then took her back to Worcester, where they have one son William Geoffrey Warren in 1902, before moving to Newport, Monmouthshire. His youngest son George marries a local girl Ada Holmes, and they have one son as well – Douglas Frederick Warren – in 1910. Neither David's youngest daughter Ethel nor his two grandchildren by William and George married locally – and there are too many possibilities to identify whether they married.

Frances Letts (Warren) is the most prolific of David's children - I have found 72 descendants. Samuel, Frances' husband is yet another shoemaker from 1871-1901+. They have nine children who live to adulthood.

Kate marries Joseph **Owen**, a coal carrier, coal merchant agent, then a coal manager, and has one son – Arthur Dennis, another shoemaker, who marries Agnes May Tift and has three children.

Fanny I am unable to find after 1881 when she was 18, at home, and a shoe fitter.

Dennis was a bricklayer, and married into the large Muscutt family from Long Buckby – to Minnie Amy (Tiny). They had 6 daughters and one son – the older daughters worked in the Pinafore factory. His mother-in-law Rhoda Muscutt/Muscott was 86 and living with them in 1911. In 1901 they lived on West St near to Kate and Joseph Owen, and Samuel & Florence Letts. Minnie’s father Henry was a shoemaker. In 1881 their children were living away, but they had ten boarders – railway laborers Navvy. I found marriages for son Arthur and daughter Rosina Kate, the latter having four sons in Daventry, but no leads beyond that. In 1861 Henry’s family was near to his two brothers’ families – William (from Warwick) and John – all were shoe makers.

Louisa married Fred Owen, perhaps Joseph Owen’s nephew, another shoemaker, and had one child Francis John in 1906.

Samuel Letts was a house painter, and married Florence Benjamin, from nearby Welton NTH – her father Caleb was a bricklayer. They had two children – one, Cecil Francis married Florence Allen and had two children in the 1930s. It looks like this family stayed in Long Buckby.

Albert Letts was a shoe maker, and married the half sister Ellen Davis of his first cousin Eva Hill’s husband William York. They lived in Northampton. They had at least two children – a third could be theirs or a daughter of one of the two other young Letts families in Northampton. Albert’s younger brother John Warren (age 25) lived with them in 1911, his mother having passed away in 1897. Both Albert’s family and his own honored his mother by including Warren as the second name of a son.

Blanche Letts worked at the Pinafore factory in Long Buckby in 1901, and married William George Sanders from a farming family in Long Buckby in 1908. It seems that they didn’t have children. The Pinafore factory made women's and childrens' clothing, and specialized in pinafores, which were quite popular after Gilbert& Sullivan performed HMS Pinafore. It employed 100 women in the first decade of the 1900s. Today it has been converted into a community hall.

Ada Frances Letts also worked in the Pinafore factory before she married Fred Townsend, brother of Bertram, who married Ada's first cousin once removed Annie York. He is yet another shoe maker. They had only one child Fred (after 1912 the only Townsend children born to a mother Letts belonged to a couple in Croydon, Surrey who were married in 1913).

John Warren Letts married Kate Ingham in 1920 in Northampton, and had 5 children from 1920-1931. I checked out all of the other Letts families in the Northampton area, and none had Ingham as the mother's maiden name. Several possible grandchildren in Northampton were identified, and marriages for four of the children.

I have found one living cousin from the Mary Warren (Ash) line, Anne Owen-Smith, who writes a blog <http://themtistedknickers.wordpress.com> , and has written an account of her childhood in the 1940s in Long Buckby for the village web-site

<http://www.longbuckby.net/villagefamilyhistory.htm>.

Particularly interesting is that Long Buckby was used as a prisoner of war camp during World War II for Germans who renounced Naziism and agreed to work on English farms. Many of them stayed on after the war, and some married local girls.

THE ASH GREAT GREAT GRANDPARENTS

James Ash married widow Mary Marlow (Bromwich) on Oct 3 1803 in Willoughby, four years after both of them had lost their spouses in 1799. I do suspect that they were both raised by the Boddingtons at one point in their childhood, so knew each other well. James was 57, and Mary only 34, and both of them had lost several children - Mary's youngest daughter Elizabeth only the year before in 1802. Her youngest son John (named after her first husband Richard Marlow's father) had died after only three weeks, leaving her son Richard as the only surviving child. Richard lived in Willoughby from 1795-1864, and married Hannah. They

were without children in the 1841 and 1851 censuses, so were probably childless - but were no doubt a comfort to Mary in her old age.

At the time, St Nicholas church was being served by a famous orator Dr. Nathaniel Bridges - in Willoughby from 1794-1834. He had a beautiful nine bedroom and four bathroom mansion called Willoughby Lodge, just south of the town near the Leam River. He was also the curate for the largest parish in England, in Bristol. He was often out of town as he was in much demand as an orator, often drawing crowds of hundreds to his sermons. James and Mary were married by Rev. James Chambers, who did the curate duties when Dr. Bridges was out of town. The Lodge became Hayword Lodge and lasted until the 1950s. Recently it has been made into a picnic area with beautiful shrubbery and bulbs.

Despite considerable effort following Bromwich families in the vicinity of Willoughby, I have been unable to prove that Mary was the niece of the executed stage coach robber James Brumage. I concentrated on the village of Crick, about 10 miles north of Willoughby, and also on the border between Warwickshire and Northamptonshire. There I found a John Bromwich born 1799 who could have been a first cousin, but there were several Bromwich families in Crick in the 1750s - there could be some link, but I never found Mary's father/uncle John or Richard, brothers of James, the murderer. I followed this family down to the 1900s (See Ash Genealogy Log 2010-11). There are other Bromwich families in the neighborhood of Rugby or Daventry, but none in close proximity to Willoughby.

James lived his whole life in Willoughby, enjoying the life of a farm labourer. From the fact that there are still many sheep grazing on the verdant green farms surrounding Willoughby today, I suspect that he was a shepherd, well acquainted with the care of sheep. In his second marriage he and Mary had four children: Elizabeth (1804), David (1806), and twins James (my great grandfather) and Joseph. We don't know what happened to Elizabeth and Joseph, but they weren't in the 1841 census in Willoughby, so may have died in childhood or moved away to apprentice or marry elsewhere.

David worked as an apprentice with tailor Thomas Hudson in 1818 in Willoughby. Apprenticeship cost 10 pounds, and was witnessed by Thomas Hesom, William Dester, George Hancock (who has been

researched) , John Cock, and magistrate John Woolf, and lasted to age 21, in 1827. Sadly, he passed away in 1837, apparently unmarried.

James, the first to use the nickname Jim, was born in 1814, so it is possible that the first James Ash from my GGGrandfather's first family could have survived until 1813 and age 41, making it more likely that he died in the Napoleonic wars. Jim took to the farm laborer life, and lived his whole life in Willoughby.

According to the land tax records, in 1823 the family lived in a cottage on the manor lands - none of these farm laborer cottages have survived to today. One of their neighbours was Thomas Howkins, James' step-grandson, son of Thomas, Mary Howkins (Watson)'s only surviving child, and a boatman on the canal. James Sr died in 1828, at the age of 76. Together with his son, there was a James Ash working the manor house farm in Willoughby for 140 years.

Mary Ash (Bromwich) lived to the ripe old age of 82 in 1851. In 1841 she was living in a room at the Navigation Inn, probably helping the friend Ann Mills who ran the Inn. This makes me suspect that she was familiar with living in an Inn from childhood, when her parents and their family were living in one of the Inns of Willoughby. She would have seen a lot of her two grandsons from her two marriages - Thomas Howkins the boatman, and my infant grandfather who was born in 1840.

MY GGRANDPARENTS JIM AND JANE - LIFE IN WILLOUGHBY

Willoughby has a great website run by Richard Jackson, which includes a picture of the modern entrance to the town and a wonderful map of the town, which is not much changed from the times when Jim and Jane lived. To recreate a picture of life as Jim and Jane lived it in Willoughby, I have extracted the most interesting stories from the online versions of the two books that have been written about Willoughby - "History of Willoughby with an account of its Mineral Waters" by Thomas Deacon written in 1828, and the much better history by the town's residents in 1988 - "Willoughby - a Warwickshire village" by W.L. Carlisle etc. - both of these can be accessed through the Willoughby web-site

<http://www.willoughbyweb.net/default.html> in the history and archives section.

Jim Ash was born on 31 May 1814. His wife Jane Marlow was two years older, being born in Willoughby on 16 Aug 1812. Their timing was quite good, as the village school was built in 1816 - using 430 pounds from the village's endowment fund (which also included caring for the poor and maintaining the lands and buildings). The fund had been set up when the Manor was willed to Magdalene College, and over the years it grew substantially, and Willoughby had superior schools and funds to help the poor because of this endowment.

Shortly after Jim and Jane were finished school, there was a disastrous decision to fire the school master William Wilkinson in 1831. He did not go away, however, and sued the eight farmers who were the local school board, and won, receiving a settlement that was so large that six of the farmers went bankrupt and were removed from the board. The locals were still not too happy with the teachers in the school - three years after Mr. Wilkinson left voluntarily, his successor was asked to clean out his quarters and leave on Christmas Day in 1842. Let us hope that the earlier master teachers who taught Jim and Jane were more to the town's liking, and that the school had settled down when my grandfather started going there in 1845.

Willoughby is a small village bounded by the "High Road" from Daventry to Coventry through Dunchurch to the NW, the Leam river to the south going through Sawbridge, a mile and a half south, and Woolscott Rd on the north. It joins the village of Woolscott with the Oxford Canal at Navigation Wharf, crossing the High Street diagonally, and passing through the Pye Court. The main town is entered along Main St from the south end of the High Road, and together with Lower Rd forms an "L" along which the main buildings of Willoughby are grouped. The school, main pub "The Rose and Crown", blacksmith and bakery shops are on Main Street, and the Vicarage, Manor House, Vale House and St Nicholas Church with its graveyard are off Lower Rd, ending in the Pye Court.

There are four pubs in the town. The "Rose and Crown" pub, over 400 years old, is the only one operating today - when I visited in 2010 they were repairing the thatch roof which had burned that winter. The Navigation Inn is at the Navigation Wharf on the Oxford Canal, and was

where the boatmen and canal workers lived when working the canal boats. The Cottage nearby was where all of the working canal horses bedded down. This is the pub where my GGGrandmother Mary Ash lived out her old age.

The Four Crosses Inn was on the highway just where you exit onto Main Street to enter the village. It is quite famous due to an unhappy visit from the writer Jonathan Swift, who, reflecting on the innkeeper's saint of a wife, who had provided a fine meal and enjoyable stay, he famously wrote "There are three crosses at your door ; Hang up your wife and you'll count four".

William Crupper ran the Four Crosses Pub during the period 1824-1841 when he owned land containing a hot springs. He built the Willoughby House & Mineral Springs in 1827, and commissioned Thomas Deacon to write a book on Willoughby which was essentially an advertisement for the spa. The waters were said to cure scurvy and scofula, and its 96 degrees water with sulphurated hydrogen was supposed to relieve lumbago and rheumatism. After putting out a history of Willoughby (by Thomas Deacon) to advertise the wonders of the hot-springs, Crupper was unable to persuade the village elders to permit common travelers in their village ("don't want those tradespeople (sniff)").

Ironically, Leamington Spa built their spa on a nearby spring, and became a vacation destination for the rich and famous! Due to a combination of William's poor business skills, the advent of medicines for the various ills of the day, and the competition, the Spa was a major failure and closed after a few years.

The fourth pub "The New Inn" is also on the "High Street" highway, about 600 yards north of the Four Crosses, where the Woolscott Rd crosses High Street. This is most likely to have been the pub owned by Thomas Bromwich when he and his wife died, leaving the running of the pub to Robert Boddington. It is likely that Mary Ash (Bromwich) would have spent some time living there. Today it is a long farm building, but it probably had a dozen rooms back in its days in the 18th century.

The church is dedicated to St. Nicholas and is situated to the west of the village, standing on its own grounds of 1.9 acres. St. Nicholas was the son of a rich nobleman and was Bishop of Myra, AsiaMinor, during the early

part of the fourth century. There are many legends concerning his acts but little is known about his life and work as a Bishop. St. Nicholas is the patron of seafarers. Many of the four hundred English churches dedicated to him are situated on the coast. St. Nicholas (Santa Claus) is also the patron of children. In some European countries presents are exchanged on his feast day, December 6th.

The church at Willoughby certainly existed in 1215 and in 1232 it was entrusted to the Hospital of St. John the Baptist, the forerunner of Magdalen College, Oxford. The east window (behind the altar) depicts the tower of the said college together with St. Nicholas in his Bishop's robes. The present church building dates mainly from the second half of the fifteenth century. The tower, north aisle and nave belong to this period. The south aisle was added later. The first chancel was built in 1662 and rebuilt for some reason in 1779. Church documents prior- to 1547 would most probably have been sent to the Vatican in Rome as "property of the Catholic Church". Parish registers were started in the reign of Henry VIII in 1538; church records at Willoughby only go back to 1625.

In 1552 (and probably earlier) there were three bells and a sanctus bell. These were recast in 1713 to provide a minor peal of five bells. A sixth bell was added in 1781. In 1920 the bells were condemned as unsafe but following a village appeal they were rehung and rang again on Boxing Day 1926. Today there is a club of Bell Ringers who peel the bells on special occasions.

Jim and Jane were married in St Nicholas on 13 March 1834, but had some difficulty beginning their young family. Elizabeth was the first born, but only lived until 1837. David was stillborn on 20 Dec 1837. My grandfather James Ash was born on 17 May 1840, and so by the 1841 census the little family of Jim, Jane and baby James came to my attention in the first year of my genealogy hobby. They were to add a sister Dinah in 1844, and brother William in 1849, after losing their Jim's two year old brother Joseph in 1844.

Jane's parents were William and Mary Marlow - William was the son of John Marlow (the brother of Richard Marlow, Jim's mother Mary's first husband). The Marlow family can be traced back to the early 1700s in Willoughby: John and Richard's parents John Marlo & Elizabeth Gefts were married in 1756 - John was born 1760 and Richard in 1765, and

they had a sister Ester (1767-1789). John's parents were John Marlo & Jane Watson, married in 1731

In 1841, Willoughby was a complete town of 343 people, including the four publicans - Ann Mills Navigation Inn and one servant; Mary Hall at the New Inn with 3 servants; Richard Beaseley at the Four Crosses Inn with 1 servant; and Richard Rowledge of the Rose Inn, also housing the schoolmaster William Clearer. William Cropper was the mallster, Thomas Ellard and William Malin the butchers, Capell Cowley was the blacksmith, John Tompson was a Hay Dealer, William Hull and John Cock were the bakers, William Ellard Jr and Henry Sawbridge were the grocers, John Watkins and William Allibone were carpenters, and Thomas Cock was the shoemaker.

The most beautiful feature of Willoughby, however, is its beautiful green farms, rolling off into the hills around the town. There have always been six farms - the White House, Home and Bath farms south of Main Street to the Leam River; the large Manor Farm in the area west of Lower Street and north of Moor Lane, the extension of Main Street that goes to Sawbridge; The cottage farm up north of Lower St, and the Gate farm on the road to the Navigation Wharf. In 1841 these were farmed by Thomas Hancock, William Cowley, John Cock, William Ellard and John Townsend, and the Manor Farm was administered by William Dester, who described himself as a Grazier (one who fattens up sheep for market). Joseph Drinkwater was the only person in town designated as a shepherd - probably working for Dester to manage all of the farm laborers involved in the keeping of sheep.

When I visited Willoughby in 2010, My favorite moment came as I walked along the Sawbridge road past the Manor farm, which was for sale. The birds were singing and the big trees were rustling – and I felt a very peaceful feeling come over me. I could see why my great grandparents never wanted to leave this pastoral paradise. The farm was full of sheep – behind the row of houses along Lower Road and leading to St. Nicholas church – with cows and horses and the church tower in the background. To the north was a footpath – all the farms were criss-crossed by public walkways entered through a revolving gate to keep the sheep in. On the census the Ash family was right at the edge of town on the road to Sawbridge, so I suspect their cottage on the Manor house grounds was near this wonderful grove of trees.

Jim and Jane enjoyed a long life together, with Jane passing away in 1878, and Jim in 1888, aged 76. Jane's father William Marlow, lived to the ripe old age of 84. He lived with Jane near the Four Crosses Inn in the 1870s. James in 1871 is living nearby as a boarder in the home of a man living off interest on investments – on London Road. This may mean that Jim was looking after the ancestors of the sheep that I photographed near the Four Crosses Inn on the way to the Navigation Inn.

In 1881 James Ash is shown living alone in his father-in-law's cottage next to the Four Crosses Inn, at the age of 69. This was a surprise to me, as I had found his death registration in 1879! However, in 1871 there was a second older James Ash aged 69 living in Willoughby, probably unrelated, so it was probably he who died in 1879.

They saw both of their sons leave the farming life - James for London with his career in the customs and excise branch of the post office, and William, tempted to Nuneaton by the opening of the huge hat-making factory at Hall & Phillips. So the family was finally taken away from farm labour by the call of the Industrial Revolution. They also were able to enjoy their daughter Dinah's wedding in Willoughby to the returning soldier Thomas Dodd - they both were there for Dinah's first-born Arthur's birth in 1875, and Jim also enjoyed their second child Charles, born in May 1879.

THE DODD FAMILY - GREAT AUNT DINAH DODD

Young Dinah Ash (1844-1885) began working as a domestic servant early in life - at the age of sixteen she was living in the Oxford Canal Toll House on West Road in Braunston, working for Charles Shepherd and his family. Charles was in charge of collecting the tolls from canal boats using the Oxford canal section of the Grand Union Canal from London to Birmingham.

In 1871 she had moved to Clevedon, a seaside community about 6 miles from Bristol. She was working as a servant for retired governess Elizabeth Tanner and her sister Ellen. She probably moved there in order to be close by when her boy friend Thomas Dodd came off for his leave from the military ships taking soldiers to far-away lands.

Interestingly her younger brother William's wife Maria had their first baby Arthur James in Bristol, even though the baby's birth was registered in Leicester where they were living, and the baby was baptized at St Nicholas in Willoughby. It is likely that the baby arrived unexpectedly while William & Maria were visiting Dinah.

Dinah and Thomas Dodd were married in Rugby at the Wesleyan Methodist Chapel on Jan. 7 1875. James Lowke (maybe a relative of the Coventry Lowke who had betrayed our murderer James Brumage) was a witness to the marriage. At the time Thomas was a farm labourer in Willoughby, but this followed a long career in the military. In 1841 Thomas was working in Hillmorton as a servant, at the age of 15. His twin brother Joseph was a servant to the farmer Ellard in Willoughby.

Then he went into the military from 16 Oct 1846 to 12 Nov 1867, a career as a private with good conduct and a silver medal for service, serving in Ionian Islands, Crimea, Malta, Gibraltar and the East Indies in the 48th Regiment Foot regiment. He was described at his discharge as 5 feet 9 inches, grey eyes, fresh complexion, brown hair, a labourer intending to live in Willoughby. He joined the army in Daventry in 1846 at the age of 20. He also won the Crimean Medal with Sebastopol Clasp, a Turkish war medal, and the Silver Medal.

The most momentous battle Thomas took part in was the Siege of Sevastopol in the Crimean War. Wikipedia describes it as: "**The Siege of Sevastopol** lasted from September 1854 until September 1855, during the Crimean War. The allies (French, Ottoman, and British) landed at Eupatoria on 14 September 1854, intending to make a triumphal march to Sevastopol, the capital of the Crimea, with 50,000 men. The 56-kilometre (35 mi) traverse took a year of fighting against the Russians. Major battles along the way were Alma (September 1854), Balaklava (October 1854), Inkerman (November 1854), Tchernaya (August 1855), Redan (September 1855), and, finally, Sevastopol (September 1855). During the siege, the allied navy undertook six bombardments of the capital, on 17 October 1854; and on 9 April, 6 June, 17 June, 17 August, and 5 September 1855.

Sevastopol is one of the classic sieges of all time. The city of Sevastopol was the home of the Tsar's Black Sea Fleet, which threatened the Mediterranean. The Russian field army withdrew before the allies could

encircle it. The siege was the culminating struggle for the strategic Russian port in 1854–1855 and was the final episode in the Crimean War.

During the Victorian Era, these battles were repeatedly memorialized. The Siege of Sevastopol was the subject of Crimean soldier Leo Tolstoy's *Sevastopol Sketches* and the subject of the first Russian feature film, *Defence of Sevastopol*. The Battle of Balaklava was made famous by Alfred, Lord Tennyson's poem "The Charge of the Light Brigade" and Robert Gibb's painting *The Thin Red Line*, as well as by a panorama of the siege painted by Franz Roubaud. Treating the wounded from these battles were celebrated English nurses Mary Seacole and Florence Nightingale."

Thomas' father Thomas Dodd was blind, probably from wounds received during his military service. Mrs. Dodd received a Chelsea pension, making it likely that Thomas Sr. was also in the military. He had five children Jane, Rachel, William, Joseph and Thomas (the latter two being twins). Thomas' twin Joseph married while Thomas was in the military - to Mary Whitbread in 1847, and had seven children and numerous grandchildren. Jane and William married into the Lowke family - Jane to Joseph Lowke in 1872, and William to Mary Ann Lowke in 1865. The Dodd brothers were taking turns living with their parents to help their blind father. Thomas may have left the military because his father had passed away - he was living with his mother Elizabeth in 1871.

Thomas married the much younger Dinah Ash in 1875, and unfortunately they had only ten years together to have a family, as Dinah died in 1885, followed closely by Thomas in 1886. They had two children Arthur (1876) and Charles (1879) who were orphaned at the ages of 10 and 7. They were looked after by Thomas' younger brother William and his first wife Mary Ann (Lowke). Unfortunately, she passed away in 1880. By the 1881 census, Arthur was 15, and working as a servant and apprentice to carpenter Ernest Johnson in Willoughby.

The two children were then raised by Thomas' brother William and his second wife Harriet Biggs (Shaw). Charles and Arthur would have known their older first cousins George, Jane and William - children of William Dodd and first wife Mary Ann Lowke, as they too lived as agricultural workers in Willoughby until William's remarriage in 1883.

Mary Ann died in 1880 in Willoughby, so Arthur and Charles would only have known Uncle William with his second wife Harriet Biggs (Shaw). Since she was from Staverton, near Daventry, it is possible they moved there when they got married, and Arthur and Charles would have had to move there after their father's death. But Arthur was old enough to be able to return to apprentice in Willoughby – five years later.

By 1891, William and Harriet Dodd were living in Braunston – he was working as a canal laborer. Braunston's major industry was canal transportation, as it stood at the intersection of the North-south canal to London, and the east-west canal to Liverpool, where freight had to be transferred. Charles was living with them, and his two older male cousins. Alfred was 16 and out on his own, apprenticing at 16 to be a carpenter, under Ernest Johnson in Willoughby. William was a canal labourer, with son George being a farm labourer and son William, a blacksmith apprentice. His second wife widow Harriet Biggs, was born in Staverton, NTH, with a 19 year-old daughter Jane Biggs, born in Napton, WAR.

In 1901 Arthur is working as a servant with the family of John Hall in Thurlaston, Dunchurch, Warwickshire, while Charles is married to Frances Emma Haynes, and is living in Braunston. He has a step-son Clifford Haynes (15 in 1911 census), who in 1901 is staying with his grandmother Sarah Haynes and Aunt Lydia Haynes in Priors Hardwick, Warwickshire. Frances was born in 1881 in Priors Hardwick, and had two younger sisters Frances and Sarah Hane, and her father Nathaniel and his father John were part of the large Haynes family of Priors Hardwick.

In 1911 Arthur too is married and living in Pitsford, Brixton, Northamptonshire. I found the maiden names of Charles and Arthur's wives by looking for the maiden names of the mother of Dodd children in Northamptonshire, and by matching the possible surnames against the marriage registration of Charles and Arthur, found that Arthur's bride was named Jeffery and that her family was from Watford, Daventry, Northamptonshire. Watford is a little east of Long Buckby, about 15 miles east of Willoughby, and Pitsford is another 6 miles closer to Northampton. Both Charles and Arthur appeared to have been farm labourers at least up to 1911.

Arthur's wife Mary Ann Jeffery was born in Watford, Long Buckby, Daventry, Warwickshire – her parents Richard and Jane had four children there in the 1881 census, and his father was born in Yardley Hastings, Brafield, Hardingstone Union, close to Northampton in 1831 – his parents Luke and Elizabeth had 5 children in the 1841 census – Richard being the middle one.

Charles and Frances had nine children, and moved around quite a bit. Nathaniel (1902) and Lillian (1904) were born in Priors Hardwick, Percy and William were born in Braunston before the 1911 census, and Noel, Charles, Ernest, Frederick and Leslie were born in Daventry parish (probably Braunston) in 1911-1920.

Arthur and Mary Ann had six children – Louisa was born near Rugby in 1907, Thomas (1905) and Henry (1909) were born in Watford, where their parents were married. In 1911 they lived in Pitsford, Brixworth which is where Mary Ann was born – so probably her parents' village. The other three were born near Daventry – probably back in Watford. Arthur (1913) died as a baby, and another Arthur was born in 1915, followed by Ernest (1917). There is a very slim possibility that Arthur served in WW I, and was killed in France at Flanders field on 22 Aug 1917, but this is highly unlikely, as he was 38. The soldier who died was living in Edgbaston, near Birmingham – and he enlisted in Birmingham, while his youngest son was born near Daventry, NTS in 1917.

I searched for descendants of Arthur and Charles using the marriage matching lookup in Find Your Past. Since Dodd is a fairly common name, there were usually many choices, and so I was able to track only the descendants who remained in the Brixworth/Daventry/Rugby area. If I find a marriage, then the children can be found by doing a birth registration search using the mother's maiden name. In some cases by searching for the children's marriages and children, I have been able to find 3-4 generations. The ones where I couldn't find a marriage could have died single, or moved to a distant part of England or out of the country.

At the time this book was finalized, the search for living third cousins descended from Dinah Dodd (Ash) has been unsuccessful, but I have included an accounting of my research into the descendants of Arthur and Charles using the English genealogy site "Find Your Past" so you can

appreciate how challenging and interesting a search for living cousins can be, given that censuses and birth records for more than a hundred years ago are closed, as are marriage and death records of people who would be less than a hundred years old. I have little luck in getting English people to answer their phones for a call from Canada, but if you have an English friend who could make the phone calls for you, I have indicated the most promising leads in bold.

ARTHUR DODD'S CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN

Thomas Henry probably died before 1911 (1905-?).

Louisa Jane Dodd (1907-?) may have remained single, but there was one Louisa J who married in 1943 in Basford, Nottinghamshire, which is not too far – about 30 miles north. She married William C Parker, and they had no children, at least not in Nottinghamshire.

Henry William Dodd (1909-) was probably single, but there were three Henry W's in the London/Sussex/Kent area marrying 1933-1937.

Arthur G Dodd (1913-bef. 1915) died as a baby, and a second Arthur G was born in 1915. There were three Arthur G's that married 1933-1941 in the London/Middlesex area, so too unclear, as there were Arthur G Dodd's born in London near 1913.

Ernest C Dodd – only one marriage had exactly that name, though there are other possibilities with additional middle initials or names starting with C. It is in the London area, so this is by no means certain, but he may have married Dora Lumm in 1938 in Lambeth, London, and had two children Ernest J and Caroline A. in Surrey. Ernest J Dodd married Jill D Wise 2Q1961 5G/1723 in Surrey and had two children Paul N Dodd in Surrey SW, Surrey 1961 3Q 5G/1248; and Darren Brian Dodd in Surrey SW, Surrey 5G/1514 in 3Q 1970. Caroline may have married, but there is only one Caroline marriage, in Shropshire (unlikely), and with name Carol in and around London (several possible).

So, all in all, the chances of contacting a cousin through Arthur's children is slim to none. Fortunately some of Charles' children stayed closer to home

CHARLES DODD CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN.

Francis Clifford Haynes (Charles' step-son) doesn't seem likely to have married within England – if he did it must have been late and distant, and there are several possibilities.

Nathaniel Sylvester Dodd married Ada Palmer (my Willoughby guide Eric Palmer's father's paternal aunt) in 1930 in Daventry parish, but they had no children – the four children born to Palmer/Dodd were in distant areas where there was another Dodd-Palmer marriage.

Lillian Sarah Dodd, however, had generations of descendants – marrying Albert E Kingston in 1930 in the Daventry area, and having three children Lillian J, Joan M and Joyce FA Kingston. Joan M may have married more distantly (Essex, Hertfordshire or Berkshire), but Lillian and Joyce married near Daventry. Lillian married Dennis Lovatt in Daventry in 1953 and had three children in Rugby – Susan A, Angela and Geoffrey, Susan A marrying John D Masters in Rugby in 1975, and having a son Graham David Masters in Nuneaton in 1981. Joyce married William G Cockerill in 1959 and had 3 children Jacqueline T, Dean W and Lee Lyndon in Daventry/Rugby. Jacqueline married Ian McLaren in 1980 and had two children Ross Ian and Terri-Ann. Lee Lyndon Cockerill married Lesley Annette Jarvis in 1995 and had a daughter Molly in 1999. I have checked for phone numbers, but none have stayed around Rugby.

Percy Cecil Nelson Dodd probably didn't marry – there were a few distant Percivals and Cecil P's etc. but no local marriage.

William Charles Reginald Dodd married May Kirby in 1934 in Daventry, but there were no children, unless they moved to Cheshire which has many Dodds, or to London or Surrey.

Noel S Dodd married Elsie Warltier in 1935 in Daventry, and had one daughter, Margaret A Dodd there in 1941. She married Alan J Haynes (no

apparent relation to the Priors Hardwick Haynes), and had two children in Northampton – Karen T in 1961 and Richard J in 1964. Karen married Keith Snoddon in 1979 in Daventry and had two daughters Amy and Jennifer in Northampton. Richard married Cheryl Harris in 1988 in Daventry, and had three children Rebecca, Nicola and Jack in Northampton, and James in Kettering. **There are phone numbers for Alan and Richard Haynes in Northampton.**

Charles Dodd married Caroline Wilson in 1936 – they had no children near Daventry, and although there are many Dodd-Wilson children, they are all in areas where there is another Dodd-Wilson marriage.

Ernest Dodd is a very common name, with many marriages all over England, Ernest V and Ernest F married in Rugby, but the most likely is Ernest Dodd marrying Gertrude Robins in Northampton in 1944. They had 2 children Norman and Valerie, and Norman married Christene Scrivener in 1967, having two children Warren and Rebecca, all in Northampton. Valerie married Michael Horne in 1969 and had three children Adam, Vanessa and Kelly, all in Northampton. **There are Hornes in the current British Telecom phone book in Northampton.**

Frederick Dodd married Constance McGarvie in 1946 in Rugby, and had one daughter Margaret, who married Brian Startup in 1972 and had two children Lisa and James, all in Rugby. **There is a B Startup in the current British Telecom phone book in Rugby.**

Leslie Dodd is another common name with possible distant marriages – the only close one is a marriage to Mary Kingsford in Peterborough, Northamptonshire. However, I was unable to find her birth/age, and so haven't entered this because of the uncertainty.

THE ANCESTRY OF THOMAS DODD SR.

The Dodd family has a genealogy expert named Christene Harvey, who is descended from our Thomas Dodd's older brother Joseph. In addition to fleshing out her branch of the Dodd family, she has discovered that Thomas Dodd, our Thomas' father the blind soldier, was born in Eydon, Northamptonshire, which is one of the few nearby parishes that have

ancient records back to the 1500s. Using the FREEREG service, I have been able to confirm that:

Thomas Dodd was born 28 Apr 1793 to parents John and Hannah Dod

John Dodd married Hannah Tines of Woodford on 17 Jun 1788

John Dod was born 26 Apr 1752 to Daniel and Jane Dod

Daniel Dod married Susannah Moore in 1729, who died in 1738

Daniel Dod had a child with Alice ? in 1740, and Alice Dod died in 1742

Daniel Dod had children with Jane - Susannah in 1744 and Jane in 1746.

Daniel was born on 25 May 1704 and baptized on 16 Jun 1704 to parents William and Susanna Dod

William Dod married Susanna Smalebone on 6 Feb 1697/98

Christene has done research with the Eydon Historical Research Society to confirm that Susanna is the great grand-daughter of Thomas Smallbone (1563-1619). Christene sent me an article on him:

Source: "The Suffering of Thomas Smallbone" by Vennesa Rigg

"Thomas Smallbone was one of the first of many Quakers to be jailed for non-payment of tithes (church taxes). The Quakers objected to paying a tithe to a Church which they regarded as ungodly. For a while Oliver Cromwell interceded to protect them from jail time, but when in 1660 the Church of England was re-established, the non-payment of taxes was a serious threat to the establishment. Soon there were 15,000 Quakers (almost half the congregation) who were in jail in England.

Thomas was tossed in Northampton Goal for five weeks for inciting people to not pay their tithes, and goods valued at three pounds five shillings were confiscated from him (about 20% of his annual income). Historians benefited from the Quaker "sufferings", as each was documented and sent to the Friends' House in London....

I was told by the secretary of Eydon historical society that the Smallbones paid tax on and owned 10 per cent of all the land in the

village. Thomas was a yeoman but of course they were impoverished later when the Enclosure act came in 1762 taking all the land from private ownership."

(Christene Harvey)

Christene's family trees, the Dodd family tree of descendants of Thomas Dodd Sr, the Vennessa Rigg article, and the FreeReg records are all kept in a paper file labelled "Dodds - Christene Harvey". The census information on the Dodd family are kept in a Word file named "Document-Dodd censuses.docx"

THE OLORENSHAWS AND MY GRANDFATHER'S FIRST FAMILY

In 1961 my grandfather James Ash had his first job away from home, working as a rural post messenger in nearby Ashby St Ledgers. Ann Olorenshaw was working as a servant in Willoughby. They may have met after she came to Willoughby for work, or possibly they attended the same school, as her family's home in Broadwell is only 5 km from Willoughby. In any case, they were married on July 1, 1861 in Leamington Hastings, near Broadwell.

Before following their family to London where they spent most of their life, let us learn about Ann's family. Her father, as shown on the marriage certificate, is Joseph Olorenshaw (sometimes spelled as Renshaw or Renshaw). The only family with Joseph the father and a daughter Ann is the Broadwell family of Joseph and Sarah. The 1841 and 1851 censuses shows that there were seven children, with Ann in the middle: Joseph b. 1831 married Jane Morgan in 1858 in Dunchurch and had 3 children and another with second wife Lucy Taylor (1869); John (1833) married Mary Webb in Rugby in 1856 and had 3 children; Ester (1835) was unmarried, one Jane died as an infant, the second Jane (1841) married Charles Goode and had two children in Broadwell; and Mabel (1843) married George Coleman in Eastbourne, but had no children. Ann was born Nov 26 1837, and was three years older than my grandfather.

Using FreeReg and Family Search, I have traced Ann's father Joseph to his birth in 1802 in Broadwell (Leamington Hastings) to Joseph (1770-1844) and Martha Rollinson of Stockton, Warwickshire. Joseph's parents were William Olorenshaw (1736-1794) and Mary Cooper (Waren), a young

widow who had nine children with William. From here the Olorenshaw expert Jill Prime has traced the entire Olorenshaw family back to the earliest known Olorenshaw, Joseph who moved to Lighthorne, Warwickshire, about 20 km SW of Willoughby, at the end of the 17th century. Jill's "The history of the Olorenshaw family" is quoted below - the bold section relates to our line.

The history of the Olorenshaw family

At the end of the 17th century in the reign of King William and Queen Mary, Joseph Olorenshaw (16? -1726) and his wife Alice (16? -1744) came to live in the small English Midlands village of Lighthorne in Warwickshire. Joseph became an affluent yeoman farmer, who left a will. Where Joseph and Alice came from and when, and their origins and parents' names are still unknown. They had 4 children, 14 grandchildren and 75 great-grandchildren from whom descend all the Olorenshaws worldwide. The eldest son William (1693-1765), who left a will, was a farmer, grazier and steward at the manor-house at Compton Verney, married three times by licence and outlived all three wives. His only child, Mary, (1726-1761) wife of Robert Green who became steward after William's death, died childless. Joseph and Alice's second child Mary (1695-1721) died unmarried. All the Olorenshaws in the world descend from *either* their third child Joseph (1697-1782) *or* from their youngest son, yeoman farmer John 'the elder' (1700-1784).

John, who left a will, married Elizabeth Hopkins in 1728 and farmed at Lodge Farm, Compton Verney and had 5 children, Elizabeth (1730- ?) who died in infancy, Joseph (1738-1820) a grazier who married by licence his cousin Elizabeth Olorenshaw (1748-1806) and had 8 children in Chesterton, Warwickshire, but only 2 of whom survived to give them grandchildren, Elizabeth (1772-1807) who married by licence farmer John Griffin also of Chesterton and had 6 children, and Mary (1773-1830) who married by licence Luke Page a farmer of Shewley, Hatton near Warwick and had a son Joseph Page. Joseph of Chesterton remarried after his wife's death but had no children. He left a will.

John Olorenshaw the elder's daughter Mary (17?- 1768?) married by licence yeoman farmer David Wesson of Hill Farm, Old Stratford and had 8 children in eleven years but only two, John and Sarah (Sally) Wesson survived. John Olorenshaw 'the elder's fourth child Ann, (1742?-1817)

married by licence Samuel Davis, a yeoman farmer of Radford Semele, near Leamington Spa and had 5 daughters who all died young and the fifth child John Olorenshaw 'the younger' (1748-1806) who left a will, a yeoman farmer who continued farming at Lodge Farm, Compton Verney, married by licence Elizabeth Walton, and had 3 daughters Elizabeth (1790-18), Mary (1793-1841) and Sarah (1796-18?). From two of the three sons of the eldest daughter Elizabeth's son John Eyres Olorenshaw, born before she later married yeoman farmer Thomas Perkins, that the Olorenshaw branches of Renmark, South Australia and of South Africa descend, with descendants worldwide including other parts of Australia and also in Denmark.

Joseph and Alice Olorenshaw's middle son Joseph (1697-1782) who left a will, married by licence in 1735 Mary Worrall, of whom nothing is known, and had 8 children, 6 born in Lighthorne and 2 in Draycote, a hamlet of the village of Bourton-upon-Dunsmore, Warwickshire. **Their eldest son William (1736-1794) a farmer and gamekeeper at Stockton, Warwickshire married by licence Mary Cooper nee Waren, a young widow, and had 9 children from whom descend the Olorenshaws of Broadwell, Warwickshire, New Zealand** (some of whom later migrated from there to Australia), and of Dundurn, Saskatchewan, Canada (with descendants now all over Canada) and of Coldwater, Michigan and Nebraska in U.S.A., (but the Michigan and Nebraska descendants are only known now by the surname 'Renshaw') and of Leamington Spa and of Lloydminster, Saskatchewan, Canada and of Alfreton, Derbyshire and **Airdrie**, near Calgary, Alberta, Canada, and of Leigh-upon-Mendip, Somerset, and of Coventry. Joseph and Mary's second child Mary (1737- ?) had 8 children by her husband Richard Waren in Bourton-upon-Dunsmore and 2 or 3 by her second husband John Robbins who she married by licence in Gaydon, Warwickshire. Joseph and Mary's third child Alice (1739- ?) had 4 children by her husband Joseph Hands in Bourton-upon-Dunsmore and their fifth child Joseph (1742-1814) had 3 children by his wife Mary Hands and 7 children with his second wife Mary Chester. From Joseph and his first wife Mary Hands descend the Olorenshaws of Leamington Spa, and of Melbourne (many of whom now live in other regions of Australia) and from Joseph and his second wife Mary Chester descend the Olorenshaws of Bilton, near Rugby, and of Salt Lake City, Utah, and Idaho, U.S.A., (of whom many now use *only* the surname 'Renshaw' and live all over the

U.S.A.) and of Troy, Michigan (who are now known *only* by the surname 'Renshaw' and live all over the U.S.A.) and of Priors' Marston where descendants now live in Toronto and Vancouver, Canada, in Denmark and Luxembourg. Joseph and Mary's fifth son John (1742-1826) a farmer at Combroom, Warwickshire had two daughters with Mary Coles who he had married by licence, and 10 by his second wife Elizabeth with descendants in England and in Australia. The sixth child Elizabeth married by licence her cousin Joseph Olorenshaw of Chesterton (see above) and the seventh child Thomas (1749-1824) who left a will, a yeoman farmer, married by licence his sister-in-law Elizabeth Robbins, and had no children. The eighth child Richard (1755-1817) who died intestate, a farmer and grazier in Draycote married Mary Webb and of their four children, two survived, Mary who married William Makepeace lived in Leamington Spa and had at least 5 children and Thomas a farmer who married by licence Ann Elkington and lived at Manor Farm, Draycote had 15 children, from whom descend the Olorenshaws of Coventry, and of Sydney, Australia.

©Jill Prime 2009

primulacov@yahoo.co.uk

From this account we can see how the Olorenshaw family spread itself world-wide, while Ann's family remained in the Midlands, close enough to meet my grandfather.

Meanwhile, our newly wed couple James and Ann Ash (Olorenshaw) settled down in Ann's home town of Leamington Hastings, and in 1764, three years after their wedding, their first born daughter Jane was born on Apr 3, 1863. She was baptised at St Nicholas in Willoughby, where James was still working as a postman. Soon after, my grandfather James received a nice promotion to Outside Officer - Customs. He probably worked at the famous London Customs House in the dock area just east of Canary Wharf, where all the ships coming into the Thames docks would stop for custom inspection. This building has a long history - it has been rebuilt twice after London fires in 1666 and 1814, using a design of Christopher Wren. It contains a "Long Room" employing 80 clerks to do the administration of the paperwork from the shipping agents for all incoming and outgoing ships, and there were over 2000 customs employees in the late 1800s.

Originally the custom service was run by farmers to impose import duties on West Indies and other foreign food (tea, sugar, wine etc.) and the export duties on wool, which provided a large part of the King's income. The excise taxes were imposed on more and more products to finance the Napoleonic wars - the new tax on liquor was fiercely opposed, and led to major smuggling along the south coast. By the time that my grandfather was recruited to customs officer, the beefed up "Waterguard" or Coast Guard patrolled the coastline and greatly reduced smuggling until most ships submitted to the required paperwork.

The most senior officials working for the Customs and Excise were known as Senior Customs Officers who had the task of searching newly arrived vessels for goods liable for duty payments. They were sometimes referred to as Tide Surveyors or as a Collector of Customs. General customs duties were carried out by Waterguard Officers. Revenue Cruisers patrolled the coastal waters and had the authority to board a vessel, while Boatmen were employed as oarsmen. Watch Officers were based at fixed sites along the coast monitoring smuggling activity. An Excise Officer was responsible for the policing of duties payable on home produced goods.

My grandfather was an outdoor Customs officer in 1871, probably involved in boarding and inspecting ships. He worked as a CS Customs Service officer for over thirty years, qualifying for a civil service pension in his declining years. The family moved often, but always lived within 7 miles of the Custom House, so I am almost certain that he worked out of this iconic building. Today it can be seen from the Greenwich observatory across the Thames, and is a very long imposing building right on the waterfront.

The residential area north of the Thames in the area of the Customs House, between the docks in Canary Wharf and the River Lea to the eastern end of the Thames Dock area was known as West Ham, and contained a number of neighbourhoods - Holloway, Stratford, Miles End, Poplar, Tower Hamlets, Bromley, Tottenham and Ilford - the famous East End neighborhoods of London. The area around the Customs House included canneries, food processing, and transportation links by rail and road to the main docks on the Thames. As the volume of work accelerated in the mid-1850s, the largely rural neighborhood of West

Ham to the north of the customs house grew rapidly to house the dock workers, with the population going from 2,000 in 1800 to over 60,000 by 1900.

In 1867, James and Ann's second daughter Emily was baptised on 18 Dec 1867 at Holy Trinity Church of Mile End Old Town - at that time the family lived at 32 Livingstone Rd, about five miles north of the Customs House, at the north end of Stratford. In the 1871 census they lived at 4 Silas Street, which was a couple of miles to the west, near Regents Park. Edith was baptised on 11 Apr 1875 at Saint Mary Stratford Bow when the family lived in Bromley, probably at 50 Merchant St St Leonard, Bromley where they lived for the 1881 census - this was only three miles from the Customs House. In 1891 they had moved again, to Tottenham at #6 St Paul's Road in Pliuna Village - a nicer neighbourhood, but still only 6 miles from the Thames docks.

Clearly they were fairly prosperous, with James earning an upper middle class income. Ann lived to be sixty years old before passing away in the second quarter of 1899, still in Miles End. Two of their daughters stayed in the same area most of their lives - Emily, who never married, also worked for the post office as a paper sorter from her teenage years into her thirties - in 1911 she was visiting, or possibly living with Edith and her family.

Ann's daughters were not too healthy, and were able to provide her with only two grandchildren - and they vanished without a trace and probably didn't survive to the next census.

Jane married Mark Douch, a 31 year old soldier (who gave his age as 26 on the marriage registration) from Hailsham, near Eastbourne - the marriage took place at the Ash family church St Mary's in Bromley on 10 Sep 1881. Eastbourne is a popular seaside getaway for Londoners, so it is possible the Ash family may have vacationed in the area, and Jane met Mark in their youth. Mark signed up for a ten year stint in the army, and served from 16 Dec 1871 to 18 May 1880, mainly in India serving with the Royal Artillery. This unit was involved with some 300,000 Indian troops and 50,000 British to keep the peace and administer law and order in the reorganized military, following the disbandment of the East India company, and during the rule of the British Raj, loyal to Queen Victoria after the 1858 Indian mutiny. It is also possible that Mark

became a police constable in Bromley after his first stint in the military, and that he met Jane there.

His character was rated as very good at the end of his service, but there were numerous misbehaviors for drunkenness recorded before his stint in India, and I wonder if Jane was aware that he had been twice treated for syphilis. In 1882 he served for two months in the British invasion to put down a rebellion against the Egyptian Khedin (ruler) which threatened British financial interests in the Suez Canal. For this he received the Medal Clasp for Egypt.

Jane and Mark took up residence in Peverley, a town near to the sea-side at Eastbourne and near to his father's home in Hailsham, Sussex. On 5 Feb 1888, they baptized a daughter Gladys Edith Douch in Pevensey. In the 1891 census Mark is a labourer, and they live at 25 Longstone Terrace/Road in Eastbourne, with three-year-old Gladys. Jane passed away in 1907, only 44 years old, and Mark lived until 1921, returning to his parents home in Hailsham after Jane died.

Emily, the middle daughter, apparently never married. She worked at the post office as a paper sorter, and probably stayed in the West Ham area of London. In 1901 she was visiting her newly married sister Edith who had married George William Brockelsby in the third quarter of 1899 in West Ham. She and George were both born in Holloway, at the western end of West Ham, only a mile or so apart, so it is possible they met each other at school. George was born in Finsbury Park, London. In 1891 he lived with his parents and seven younger siblings at 2 Sutherland Road in Tottenham, in the same neighbourhood as the Ash family. He is already pursuing a white collar career, working as a clerk at age 16. Ten years later, he has a position as a Secretary Public Companies.

Their home is at 44 Gordon Road, Ilford, Sussex, again less than five miles from the London Customs House. Shortly after the April census in 1901, Emily had her baby William Thomas H Brockelsby. Ten years later, they were living in the same house, but with just Emily and George. They answered the question on how many children with 1, and having had no children die - it is possible that he may be elsewhere going to school. Their neighbours include a porter, government electricity collector, a

truss maker and a teacher - ie it is a middle class neighbourhood. I haven't found any trace of the Brockelsby family after 1911.

George William's parents are Thomas A and Annie Brockelsby - he is a Hair Dresser who was born in Boston, Lincolnshire. Brockelsby, usually spelled Brocklesby, is a surname that comes primarily from Lincolnshire. In 1891 he gives his name as William, which must be his preferred name, and it is clear that Edith's son is named after Geo William's father Thomas and Grandfather William. In the 1881 census his family lived in 208, Seven Sisters Rd, Islington, and his name is given as George, age 6, and his father is a Master hairdresser. His father Thomas has an unrelated assistant living with his family, and also employed his older son 15 yr old Tom as an assistant.

Thomas Brockelsby is found with his parents William (a shoe-maker/cordswainer) and Hannah, in Boston, Lincolnshire, age 12 in the 1851 census. At 22, in 1861, he has already begun hairdressing, living with boarders the Long family on James Street in Boston. In 1871 I couldn't find him or Annie - it may be before they were married. His son Tom, however is 5 years old and living with friends William and Martha Shaw - he is probably Thomas' son from another marriage - perhaps with the Shaws' daughter?

George's grandfather William was a shoe-maker, and in 1861 lived in Lincoln Lane, Boston with daughters Ann, and Sarah who was deaf dumb and blind from birth, all born in Boston, as was his wife Hannah. In 1851 they lived on West Street in Boston and Thomas is 12, going to school. There is an older daughter Mary, a dress-maker at age 14, as well as Ann and Sarah. Living with them is William's father Edward, who is a widower, age 73, born in 1778, and also a Cordwainer (shoe-maker). In the 1841 census we find William and Hannah on West street, Boston with older daughter Frances, age 8, and Thomas, age 2.

It seems that our family seems to love making shoes - in addition to the Warren family shoemakers in Long Buckby, my Uncle William Albert was a shoemaker in Rugby, the Brocklesby family made shoes, and on the Redmond side, my great grandmother's Bishop family made shoes, as did Ebenezer Pace after his family was impoverished by being on the wrong side in the American Revolution.

So, we have been able to trace George William Brockelsby's family back three generations to great grandfather Edward, born 1778; Grandfather William, born 1807, father Thomas, born 1839, and George William himself, born 1875, and it was Thomas who moved from Boston, Lincolnshire to London/Islington before 1891. Boston had been an important port in the wool trade to Europe in the 1300s and 1400s, but later declined when the river silted over and the sheep pasturing moved west and south. It was being rebuilt in the time the Brockelsby's lived there, when a new dock, a mill and a corn exchange were built, and the river was dredged.

MY GRAND UNCLE AND GRAND AUNT MARIA TOMKINS FAMILY

William, the youngest son of James and Jane's family in Willoughby and my great uncle, was married young. In 1868, at age 19, he married 17 year old Maria Tomkins in Aston, Warwickshire. Like many of his generation, he left the farm in search of the higher wages available in the factories and new businesses in nearby cities. They travelled quite a bit in their youth - their first two children were born in Leicester in 1870 and 1871. Their son Arthur James was actually born on a visit to Bristol, probably to see William's sister Dinah who was living there at the time. Arthur and Minnie were both baptised in Willoughby, even though they lived and were registered in Leicester, so William did keep in touch with his parents.

In 1872 they moved to Nuneaton, where they were to have nine more children, although three died as babies (James, Frank and James), little Amy Alice lived only to age ten, and their eldest son Arthur James died at age 21, being unmarried. Nuneaton had been for over a century the centre for making ribbons of all kinds, and in 1830, 4000 people worked making ribbons. As machines were introduced and fewer people were employed, the town languished - so it was with great fanfare that the mighty Hall & Phillips company of Atherstone moved half of its equipment in 1872 to the Abbey Mill in Nuneaton, which was to become the center of the felt hat making industry that was to employ William and a number of his family members in their first jobs.

The making of felt hats was a particular skill, and the machinery to assist in their production were quite intricate. The hat industry in the eighteenth century was centered in Atherstone, a few miles from Nuneaton, near Tamworth. The owner, one Joseph Willday, whose descendants ran the hat factory for over a hundred years, becoming famous for the Atherstone Cocks, cheap hats that were worn all over England, and were exported to the American plantations for cotton workers. There is a legend that St Clements on a long and weary journey, noticed patches of wool caught on the fences, and stuffed them into his shoes to relieve the pain. When he arrived at his destination, the wool had been pounded into a comfortable felt lining - hence the beginning of making felt.

The Abbey Mill is a large modern factory adjoining the walls and looking down upon the ruins of Nuneaton Abbey. To these mills, lands which were all unknown when the Abbey walls were reared, now send their raw produce. From Australia, New Zealand, or the Cape, come these huge tightly packed bales of clipped wool. Canadian rivers have been plundered to furnish these packages of Beaver fur; South America sends the fur of the Nutria; while from all parts of the United Kingdom the prolific rabbit and shy hare yield their furs also for manufacture into hats.

The process of making the felt, and then shaping it into hats and sewing on the brims is detailed in its complexity in a description of the factory processes in the " Nuneaton & North Warwickshire Family History Society - Newsletter Page 3"

William lost his eldest son Arthur at only 21, and his two eldest daughters married and moved away from Nuneaton. Minnie married Samuel Ernest Martin in August 1900, and moved to Weybridge, Surrey where they had four children Cyril, Gladys, Basil and Gerald. Samuel was from Somersetshire - in Weybridge he was the Superintendent of S P & C at the Post Office. They lived at Minorca Road in 1901, and at 6 Molyneux Villa Melrose Road in 1911.

Margaret Ellen Mary, the third child, was a domestic servant in the home of George Wilson at 129 Abbey St in Nuneaton. In 1894 she married John William Grimshaw from Botton on Dean near Sheffield. He became a mechanical engineer, like his father Samuel who was an Engine Smith.

His mother Delilah Bradwell was the daughter of Clement Bradwell. Margaret and John had no children - they lived in Worcestorshire, at Kings Norton in 1901, and in Clent in 1911, both suburbs of Birmingham.

Fourth child Charles William Ash married a local girl Edith Sarah Smith, whose parents William Smith and Emily Bates married in Nuneaton in 1872. They stayed in Nuneaton, and had five children between 1899 and 1907 - Sarah, Charles, Edith, Amy and William. In 1911 Charles worked as a clerk to the Nuneaton Cooperative Society, and his family lived at 87 Alexander St in Chilvers Coton, a suburb of Nuneaton. Most of his grandchildren came from his youngest son William Edwin's marriage to Dora Banthorpe - they had four children in Nuneaton.

The William Ash family lived at 25 Court Abbey St in 1881, when William worked as an Engine Stoker at the Hat factory. From 1891 to 1901 they lived at 14 Manor Court Road, and William had become a Felt Hatter, before trying his hand as a Life Insurance agent in 1901. In 1911 they lived at 33 Coronation St, and William was back in the hat factory as a Hatter Stretcher. All of these homes were within easy walking distance of the Hall & Phillips Hat Factory.

Another Ash wedding takes place in mid-1900 - his son Edwin Ash married Beatrice Amy Jephcott - they had their daughter Margaret early in 1901, and were living with William's family at the time of the 1901 census. Beatrice was also working as a tailoress, and Edwin as a tailor's cutter. I am guessing that it was one of these two 1900 Ash marriages (Minnie and Edwin) which attracted my grandfather to Nuneaton to take part in his niece and nephew's weddings. Since two of the Farrell brothers also lived in Nuneaton at the time, I am guessing that it was at these weddings that the recently bereaved James Ash met his second wife Catherine Farrell, and brought her to Rugby as his nurse/housekeeper.

The youngest surviving son Alfred also married a local girl - Jessie Mee Grimes - in fourth quarter of 1906. Her parents Albert Grimes and Harriet Taylor were born nearby in Stockingford and Leicester respectively. They had two children - Alfred in Nuneaton in 1911, and Mamie in Leicester in 1917. So that brought to twelve the number of grandchildren for William and Maria. I have been unable to find the marriages of the grandchildren, though I know there is a descendant

named Ferguson who I matched in Lost Cousins - ie we share an ancestor who was alive in 1881- presumably William Ash. Unfortunately he doesn't know much about his family, except that he is descended from Alfred.

I have had more luck tracing Maria Tomkins' large family, many of whom still lived near Nuneaton during her lifetime. Her parents were Daniel Tomkins, a farm labourer, and Mary Holt, who raised their large family of 9 children in Dunchurch, close enough to Willoughby for Maria to meet William at school or at social events. They have very similar backgrounds, with the biggest difference being that Maria came from a much larger family, having 9 siblings. This meant that there were always a large number of cousins for William&Maria's children to enjoy, in Nuneaton, near Rugby and in Birmingham, all in the Midlands and not too far for the occasional visit.

Her oldest brother **George** Tomkins married Emma Cooke, and had ten children from 1862-1882, and at least 8 grandchildren in Birmingham, plus grandchildren in Cheshire and Aston, Warwickshire. He was a carpenter, but in 1891 he was sitting in the Winson Green Prison in Birmingham, for crimes unknown, while his wife lived at home with the youngest children. Eldest daughter **Jane** married Ralph Mason and had one child in Leamington Spa, near to her parents. He lived separately from his family as a live-in attendant for a lunatic in the home of Dr. Jeaffreson of Leamington. Her daughter Sarah followed in her father's footsteps, working as a nurse living in an asylum in 1901 before she married Charles Thisteton, who had three children from a previous marriage - she carried on her profession after her marriage.

Anne married bricklayer Isaac Tooby in 1865 in Southam, Warwickshire. They had 9 children, moving to Chilvers Coton (suburb of Nuneaton) when the hat factory arrived in 1872. The family prospered in Nuneaton, with dozens of Tooby grandchildren, and eight Haycocks from their daughter Rosa. **Emma** and **Mary** were unmarried, but **Harriet** married shoemaker Samuel Fretter and had eight children in Rugby. Interestingly, in 1911 the family lived on the same York Street (#91) where my father was born in 1901. **Charles** lived unmarried in Dunchurch.

Sarah Ann married groom and coach driver Job Bosworth in 1877 in Warwick, and had nine children there. Their children were domestic cooks (Amy), Royal Navy seaman (Percy) and a railway engine stoker (Frank). There were four grandchildren in Warwick (Edith & Joseph Mills), two in Nottingham (Frank), three in Rugby (Ada & Harold West the cowman) and one more (Sidney), and another three (Herbert) for a total of seven in Rugby.

Ellen married carter and cart maker John Underwood in Wolverhampton, Staffordshire in 1876. They soon moved to Birmingham, and had most of their eight children there. The Underwood sons became interested in the metal industry - Alfred as a silversmith, Charles as a brass worker, and George as a sheet metal worker. The eldest son James became a butcher, and had one grandchild in Birmingham - Frederick had four, Alfred four, and George, after marrying and having one child in Bristol, came back to the Birmingham area for his second child - giving Ellen and John a total of 11 grandchildren living locally in Birmingham. The three youngest were the girls Gertrude, May and Lillie, whose marriages I didn't find.

Youngest son **James** worked as a labourer in the building trades, having four children in Rugby and Nuneaton.

So William and Maria lived a long and prosperous life, enjoying their children and Maria's nieces and nephews. In their old age they moved to Rugby where Maria passed away in 1922, and William three years later in 1925. They have a large stone and family plot in the Clifton Road Cemetery in Rugby - with the inscription " In loving memory of MARIA wife of WILLIAM ASH who died July 22nd 1922 aged 70 years. Also of WILLIAM ASH husband of the above who died Oct. 29th 1925 aged 76 years. "At rest" ".

MY GRANDPARENTS BRIEF TIME TOGETHER

I don't know why my grandfather left his family in London after his wife passed away, and decided to move to Rugby. Perhaps he felt some kinship with his younger brother William's family, or just wanted to be near where he spent his childhood. He turned 60 years old in 1899, and

probably took retirement from the Customs officer job, and received his well-earned civil service pension. He had already been diagnosed with diabetes, and was probably somewhat handicapped, needing a place where he could get some medical help as well as assistance with his daily routine.

Rugby had grown from a sleepy little town of 2500 with the coming of the railway, when it became a major junction (and sometime bottleneck) joining the London-Birmingham train through the Midlands to NE England lines. There followed major rail employment as well as new industries: wagon works, engineering firms, a corset factory, the Willans & Robinson company making steam engines, and the population reached 10,000. Preparing to open a huge new factory for electronics, and later diesel engines, in Rugby, the British Thompson Houston company, the European subsidiary of Thomas Edison & Co, built a whole new subdivision up the hill in Rugby, and it was one of these fine new townhomes at 15 York St that attracted my grandfather in 1901. So my grandfathers house was a new three story 3 bedroom attached house with four brick topped chimneys, on a beautiful curving street of new brick town-houses.

He needed a housekeeper, and she turned out to be my grandmother Catherine Farrell, who came from a large Irish Catholic family in Tamworth. I can speculate that because two of Catherine's brothers (Bernard and Thomas) lived in Nuneaton very close to the William Ash family, that perhaps they met in Nuneaton at one of the two marriages, of Edwin and Minnie, William's son and daughter that both happened in summer of 1900. Most of Catherine's sisters did tailoress work and housecleaning, and had early jobs in that area prior to 1901. At the time of the census in April 1901, Catherine was housekeeping and living with James at 15 York St with her younger sister Ellen, a corset maker. It was about this time that my father was conceived. Catherine under-stated her age as 26 when she was actually 31.

James and Catherine were married that summer on 23 Jun 1901. The marriage took place at the beautiful St. Matthew's Church in Rugby, which contains a two peal bell tower dating back to the 13th century, the oldest building in Rugby. Catherine was apparently willing to marry outside the Catholic church to give her baby a proper start in life. My father was born on Dec 16, 1901, while outside in Clifton park a row of

trees was planted to honour the new King Edward VII, Queen Victoria having passed away. When I visited with Fran in 2010 the trees were sixty feet high, and made for a very impressive park entrance. I knew Dad was born in Rugby, England, so when I went to Europe in 1966 with my friend Jim Mackenzie, we took a slow milk train in order to stop briefly in Rugby. We found the birth registration office a few blocks from the rail station, and I saw his birth registration recorded in a huge four foot wide book where his birth was recorded in beautiful hand-writing. This was so much more dramatic than the business-like but battered birth certificate he carried to Vancouver. However you didn't have to go very far up the hills to see the smog that was over the city from all of the coal-burning industries there.

My uncle William Albert came along on 24 Nov 1902, but our little family didn't have long to enjoy their love, as tragedy struck when James' diabetes led to gangrene less than two years later, and he passed away one month after Bertie's birth, on 19 Dec 1904, just three days after my father's third birthday. It seems that James had been renting his digs at 15 York, and the family had moved to 49 Stephen Street, only a few blocks away. Nellie (Ellen) was there to comfort her bereaved sister, and signed the death certificate, and his death from gangrene in his right foot was certified by Thomas Duke M.R.C.S. "Bertie", as Dad called his brother, had lung problems throughout his life, and I'm sure the burgeoning coal burning industries didn't help his lungs.

Sadly, James' civil service pension ended on his death, and the young family was left in desperate circumstances. There was no evidence that Catherine received any help from James' brother William, or from James' daughters in London. She apparently was forced to go back to supporting her family from housekeeping, usually for widowers with children, and returning home to her father's place in Tamworth or her sister's family until they could no longer be of much help because of their own poverty.

She and her closest sister Nellie both moved to Nottingham, where Nellie had found a lover Herbert Howorth, and by 1911 Catherine was working for a widower Mr. Jackson, who had six children, but was apparently unwilling to accept two children with Catherine, leading to my father's exit from the family to Barnardo's and later to his emigration to Canada. It is likely that my father didn't get along with the men in my

grandmother's life, hastening his departure. Before carrying on to follow Catherine's life with sickly William and her subsequent marriage to John Brown, let's have a look at the large Irish family that was Catherine's support system through trying times. Her father finally gave his birth place - Elphin in county Roscommon, Ireland on the 1911 census, and from this I was able to trace her father and grandfather and something of their lives.

MY GRANDMOTHER CATHERINE FARRELL'S IRISH CATHOLIC FAMILY

Catherine's father Joseph Patrick Farrell (he used one of his two names, as well as the Irish version Jophias in consecutive censuses) was born in the town of Elphin in County Roscommon, Ireland about 1837. I asked the County Roscommon Heritage and Genealogy company to search the local records for information on his father, duly recorded on his marriage registration, Bernard Farrell. They failed to find any baptismal record in that timeframe. Because we don't know his mother's name, the best they could come up with was two Farrell families having children in Elphin, and six Farrell marriages elsewhere in County Roscommon.

In the 1849 Griffith's Valuation, Bernard Farrell is seen to have two properties: - the plot in the town was worth 15 shillings, and his land and buildings just outside the town was valued at 7 pounds 5 shillings. In both locations his neighbour was Patrick Kelly, and his landlord was Christopher French. This census was done for Bishop Edward Synge of diocese Elphin mainly for the purposes of identifying what part of the population were papists (abbrev papt) ie Roman Catholic. There were a total of 166 Protestants and 4005 Catholics in Elphin, so the parish was overwhelmingly Catholic. There were also Thomas Farrell and Bernard Farrell families near to Elphin.

The one family that both married and had children in the Elphin parish, and the most likely of the possibilities suggested by the researchers is the marriage of Bernard Farrell to Bridget Conor in Elphin, on 18 Jan 1830 (witnessed by Bridget Conor and Patrick Connor). The O'Conor family was one of the nearby aristocratic landholders. They had eight children

baptised, with the eldest three being Catherine, Mary and Bridget - the names Joseph chose for his first three girls. These three and Michael were born in Carramore, some 25 km from Elphin from 1831-1836. the last four Honor, Bernard, Eugene and Matthew were born in Shankhill, which is only 3 km from Elphin, from 1841-1849.

Travellers' accounts from the period described the land around Elphin as being fertile soil with numerous bogs, with rich pastures and numerous cattle and sheep. The land may have been good, but the living conditions not so much, with most families living in "little huts or cabins built of sods and covered with rushes... not sufficient to keep out a shower of rain .. perhaps inhabited by eight or ten men, women and children, half-naked". There were no trades in Elphin, that being reserved by the law of the lands to Protestant towns - Catholics were not permitted to own land or businesses.

In the 17th and 18th centuries, Irish Catholics had been prohibited by the penal laws from owning land, from leasing land; from voting, from holding political office; from living in a corporate town or within 5 mi (8.0 km) of a corporate town, from obtaining education, from entering a profession, and from doing many other things that are necessary in order to succeed and prosper in life. The laws had largely been reformed by 1793, and in 1829, Irish Catholics could again sit in parliament following the Act of Emancipation.

The Commission stated that the principal cause for reforming the law was the bad relations between the landlord and tenant. There was no hereditary loyalty, feudal tie or paternalism as existed in England. Ireland was a conquered country, with the Earl of Clare speaking of the landlords saying "confiscation is their common title." According to the historian Cecil Woodham-Smith, the landlords regarded the land as a source of income from which to extract as much money as possible. With the Irish "brooding over their discontent in sullen indignation" according to the Earl of Clare, Ireland was seen as a hostile place in which to live.

Bernard was fortunate in having an old Irish aristocrat Christopher French as his landlord. He was a scholarly man who was a Doctor of Law and a Justice of the Peace. His mother from Carrick-on-Shannon was the daughter of Reverend William Percy.

The Frenchs were part of the 'landlord' class but had a good reputation and had a close relationship with their tenants. Christopher French was the father of the famous Percy French, one of the most beloved singers and entertainers, a contemporary of Gilbert and Sullivan, and almost as famous.

I believe that Christopher French was good to his tenants, of which Bernard Farrell was one, but others were not so lucky. Many just threw their tenants off the land during the famine, and many ended up in the workhouse in Stokestown. Clearly the potato famine was a major factor in Patrick's decision to emigrate to England to work in the Tamworth coal mines.

The French family is very prominent in Roscommon affairs, and earlier played a major role in the history of Galway. Christopher is the lord of the manor of Cloonyquin, which is only 3 km from Elphin. The family is closely related to the French family in the barony of French Park - home of the two MPs of Roscommon Col. Stephen French and Don O'Conor. Before the 1700s, the French family was spelled Ffrench, and its' seat of power was in Galway, where French's were often the mayor and most prominent citizens. Interestingly, this branch of the family can be linked to the same battle in the 1100s in the "Hook" by Waterford's harbour in which the Redmond and Devereux ancestors were two of Strongbow's generals - Theophilus de French was a minor officer with William the Conqueror, and the family came to Co. Wexford with Strongbow in the 1100s, and were granted land near to the "Hook" of Redmond fame.

Walter Ffrench moved from Wexford in 1425 and founded the Galway tribe, one of the fourteen tribes that were prominent in Galway governance up to the present day. The French family has an association www.frenchfamilyassoc.com where the family lines can be traced. Christopher's grandfather was the third son of Col. John French (1764-1823) - the eldest son inherited the Roscommon land at French Park, while the Cloonyquin property came down to Christopher via his father William Christopher. Col. French was the grand-son of Arthur French, mayor of Galway - Christopher's branch came from Arthur's second wife Sarah, who was the widow of Iriel Farrell of Cloonyquin in the late 1600s.

In 1851 before the height of the potato famine, the English were accused of genocide, as in the previous decade 22,000 died of starvation, and over

400,000 died from infectious diseases associated with extreme poverty. Whole villages were decimated as landlords converted from growing food to more profitable grazing land, and they were required to sell their produce to England in precedence over local needs. Tens of thousands were forced off their lands by poverty laws requiring them to give their land away before they could receive alms. The nearest workhouse, in Stokestown, wasn't built until all the available private houses were overflowing with the starving - today there is a museum commemorating the terrible times. Roscommon was the hardest hit county, losing over 32% of its population to famine and disease.

So, as soon as he was grown up, Joseph/Patrick took advantage of openings in the coal mines near Tamworth, and migrated to the Midlands for a better life. Tamworth had a sizable Irish population, sufficient to support a local Catholic Chapel of St. John. So it was in the chapel where 25 year old Patrick married 18 year old Hannah Callaghan with the local priest Father James Kelly, on 23 Sep 1867. Both bride and groom signed with an X, and their wedding was witnessed by Matthew Shearing and Mary Callaghan (Hannah's younger sister) who was the only one who signed herself. One week earlier, Patrick had witnessed the marriage of his friend Matthew Shearing to Catherine McQueeney. Both fathers - Thomas Callaghan and Bernard Farrell - were listed as labourers, as was Patrick. Although there was a (Winifred) Callaghan family in Elphin, it is more probable that he met his wife in the local community attending the Chapel, perhaps after having found work in his new home. However, Hannah had been born in Ireland as well.

In the 1871 census Mary (2) and Catherine (1) (my grandmother) had joined the family - Hannah (Ann)'s sister Mary was living in Patrick and Hannah's home at 12, Freemans Yard, Bolebridge St, Tamworth. Ten years later the family lived in the same house, and had added Elizabeth (8), Ann (6), Bernard (4) and Ellen (1) - and now Joseph/Patrick called himself Joseph, and was a coal miner. The family was probably very poor - everyone was pitching in - Ann working as a paper sorter. By 1891 the family had a new residence at 67 Church St, almost next to the Anglican church St. Editha's, and all but the newest additions to the family (Thomas, 8; Maggie 6; Joseph 4) were working at something - Bernard at 14 was a laborer, and the four eldest daughters were all sewing clothes as Tailoresses. 12 year old Ellen was now known by her nick-name Nellie, and was going to school with the younger children.

The 1901 and 1911 censuses give us a clue what happened to most of the Farrell children - considering the relative poverty the family lived in, it is amazing that all of the 9 children reached adult-hood and beyond. We know that Catherine was living with my grandfather in Rugby, and that her younger sister Nellie (age 21) was living with them, working as a corset maker.

Living at home with Joseph and Hannah were older sister Mary (now 32), baby brother Joseph/Patrick (14), and two mysterious children Bernard (3) and Arthur (1), both born in Nuneaton. I thought at first that they

must be Mary's, but considering the place and the chosen names, they were almost certainly her brother Bernard's, children born out of wedlock. We find Bernard boarding in Nuneaton with the Groves family at 9 Clarence St in Nuneaton, only a six minute walk from the William Ash home on 14 Manor Park Rd (which is why I thought the Farrells and Ash families may have known each other, and been at the same Ash wedding in 1900).

Bernard was working as a bricklayer and labourer, and was apparently being a bad boy, sending his illegitimate off-spring home to Tamworth for Mommy and his older sister Mary to take care of. I wasn't able to find Bernard in the 1911 census - he may have moved away or emigrated. There was another Farrell baby born and dying in 1895, but I don't think it was Bernard's, as in the 1901 census there was an unrelated Farrell nurse who had a baby of the same name - Sidney Albert. There is a "Bert" Farrel in Tamworth of about the right age and occupation in 1911, so perhaps this is him - and the landlord just mistook his boarder's first name, but if so, what has happened to the two children?

Mother Hannah died in 1902, in the late spring. Mary, by now 33, was relieved of the responsibility to care for her parents, and married a local man William Caleb Large (age 34) in Tamworth, near the end of 1906 when Mary was 37. It seems that the couple had no children, as none were recorded in the 1911 census. They were living at 155 Main Rd Kettlebrick, in Tamworth, with William working as a bricklayer and labourer, and Mary as a sewing machinist. William was born in Northamptonshire to parents Caleb and Ann, and lived in Leicester in 1871 and in Litchurch, Derbyshire in 1881. In 1901 William lived with several Navvys in the Carpenter's Inn pub in Upper Gungate, Tamworth, working as a bricklayer.

By a fortunate coincidence, Joseph's third daughter Elizabeth was visiting, and possibly caring for her elderly father in his new home at 21 Alvecote Cottages in the Shuttington parish of Tamworth at the time of the 1911 census. She gives her name as Elizabeth Wood, and has been married fourteen years, with three children, all living. Joseph finally gives his birth place as Elphin, in Roscommon. His wife has died, and he is now retired from coal mining. His son Thomas is now a coal miner labourer underground, age 26 and single, living with his father.

From this information, I was able to find Elizabeth's marriage registration in the 4th quarter of 1896 to Albert Wood, the marriage taking place in Aston, about 5 miles from Birmingham, and 12 miles to Tamworth, NE of Birmingham. Aston has a Catholic Church - Sacred Heart and St Margaret Mary. In 1911 Albert is home with the three children Elsie Irene (13), Wilfed John (12), and Olive Gladys, at 98 Lichfield St, Tamworth. He is the Assessor And Collector Of Taxes Asst Overseer And Poor Rate Collector for Tamworth.

Looking back in time, we find Albert (mis-spelled as Abel) age 2 in 1871 with his parents John and Maria, living at Old Schoolyard, 154 Church St, near to where Elizabeth was to be born later in 1871 at 27 Church St. Ten years later, his full name is given as Albert James, his father John is an ironstone miner, born in the village of Baddesley, with Maria being born in nearby Erdington. Both these villages are within walking distance of Aston, where Elizabeth and Albert were married, but the family is living in the Fazely district of Tamworth. In 1891 Albert is working as a barman, living at 31b, The George, George St in Tamworth. Ten years later, he is the innkeeper of the Dog Inn, at 69 Gungate St - his father John is a "licensed victualler". Perhaps this is the same Inn (named Carpenter Inn in 1901) in which William Large lived in 1901 before marrying Mary Farrell - it was said to be in Gungate.

The only child I have been unable to find after 1891 is the fourth daughter Ann - she could have died before 1901, or married and moved away.

Catherine's favorite sister appears to be Nellie (Ellen), who was living with her and my grandfather in 1901, and was with Catherine to fill out James Ash's death registration in 1904. It is a mystery what support, if any, the Farrell family was able to provide from 1904 to 1911 when we find both Catherine and Nellie in Nottingham. Their mother had passed away in 1902, and Mary had married, so it seems unlikely that her father would have been in much of a position to support a baby.

In my father's application to Barnardo's, it is written as part of his history that "Latterly, he lived with his aunt in Tamworth, but as the aunt had a family, and her husband, a laborer, is out of work, she was unable to maintain the boy any longer". It is not clear who this aunt would be, as Mary would have not had a family, unless she was still looking after

Bernard's kids, and Elizabeth's husband seemed to have reliable work, unlikely to be out of work. Perhaps it is the other sister Anne whose fate I've been unable to determine?

Meanwhile, In 1911 Nellie is living with an apparent widower Herbert Owen Howorth, a Joinery Works Manager, on 25 Melbourne Rd in West Bridgford, a suburb of Nottingham. She wrote to my father in Barnardo's, giving her name as Nellie Howorth. His first marriage was to an Irish girl Ida Jane Burtchaell, and in 1901 they were visiting his younger brother in Nottingham – already he was a Joinery Works Manager, but their baby was born in Derbyshire, which borders on the Basford area of Nottinghamshire. There is an Ilkeston Joinery, which still exists and has a web-site

<http://www.companiesintheuk.co.uk/ltd/ilkeston-joinery/>

Ilkeston, Derbyshire is only 4 miles from Nottingham. I searched 1901-1911 for her death, but couldn't find it – so maybe he really isn't a widower – maybe she left him? It is interesting that Herbert's brother Owen was born in France. I could find neither of the brothers in 1881-1891 censuses. Herbert had three young children, so perhaps Nellie was the Aunt who couldn't keep my father - but again, Herbert seems unlikely to be unemployed, but that may have been just an excuse.

In 1911 Catherine Ash and her two children are living with a widower Mr. Jackson and his six children - he is apparently the man who could find room for only one of Catherine's children. My suspicion, from the fact that the Barnardo's application was made by a police constable/social worker in charge of rescuing children of alcoholics, is that my father and Mr. Jackson didn't get along, and maybe even that my Dad reported him to the police. After Dad went to Barnardo's in London, Catherine met her second husband John Brown, who lived in Basford - not far from where Nellie and Herbert Howorth lived and worked.

The youngest sister in the family is Margaret, who is just 18 in 1901. At census time she is a barmaid living in the White Hare Hotel on Long St in Atherstone (just a couple of miles from Tamworth). It seems to be a theme to the Irish Farrell family - Elizabeth married a pub owner who started out as a barman; Mary married a man who lived in a Pub; and Margaret works in a pub as a teenager. In 1911 I am unable to find her,

and unable to find a marriage near Tamworth. She is not with her elderly father in 1911 - older sister Elizabeth is visiting him. It occurs to me that Catherine and Nellie were unlikely to be teetotallers - maybe it was her mother's drinking that drove my father into Barnardo's.

The most upstanding young man in the Farrell family is the youngest son, who was named Joseph Patrick Farrell after his father. He was married in 1909 to Betsy Hollington in Tamworth, and had seven children; four before the war (Elizabeth Ann(1909), Constance Ellen (1911), Thomas Bernard (1913), and Joseph Patrick (1915)). He fought in World War I, and survived to have three more children; Reginald Alfred (1920), Pauline Margaret (1924) and Betsy (1927), all born in and around Atherstone. All of their children lived until late in the 20th century or into the next one.

He signed up for the military on Nov 18, 1914 in Atherstone. At that time he was 28, 5'7", with blue eyes and dark brown hair, Roman Catholic, and was considered fit to join the Royal Regiment of Artillery (R.G.A). He lived with his wife Betsy Farrell (Hollington) and three children at 30 N Lynch St, Polesworth, and his marriage was registered by John P. Walton, Registrar of Tamworth, and witnessed by Thomas Farrell and Angelina Hollington, and the children's birth dates were given. He was a coal miner, and weighed 143 1/2 pounds. He received the B.W & V medal on P2237, in the 1914-15 Star Page Series.

The R.G.A. regiments operated the heavy trench batteries which were capable of blasting holes several yards wide in the enemy's trench. The Germans were the first to develop these weapons in late 1914, with the British deploying early in 1915. The early versions were very dangerous to those firing the weapons, as well as their targets. The breakthrough came in mid 1915 when the Stokes 3 inch mortar was approved. It required 27 men to service and fire it, but was much safer, and much more accurate than its predecessors. It was used to send smoke bombs and mustard gas, as well as giant shells.

Catherine's father died in Atherstone in the last quarter of 1912. He was 75 years old - having retired from coal mining after his wife's death in 1902. He was a coal miner from the time he arrived in England, and could be proud of raising 9 healthy children to adult-hood and providing

them with a decent start on life.

THE BROWN FAMILY - 2ND MARRIAGE OF MY GRANDMOTHER

The last letters that my father's mother Catherine wrote through Barnardo's in London came from her new address of 33 Derby Rd, East Kirkby, which is in the parish of Basford, Nottinghamshire, and within a couple of miles of the border with Derbyshire, and only a few miles from Nottingham. The nearest town in Derby is Ilkeston, which is where sister Nellie's man Herbert Howorth worked. It is fairly likely that Catherine met John Brown while socializing with her sister Nellie. John and Catherine were living together before my father set sail for Canada, but it is not certain that my father ever had the opportunity to meet him.

John and Catherine were married by certificate on 7 Dec 1912 at the Registrar's office for Basford, on the border of Nottinghamshire and Derbyshire. Curiously, the registrar's name was William Shakespeare. The marriage was witnessed by John's eldest son John Thomas, who was nineteen years old. Both fathers were now deceased - John Brown senior shown as a gardener and Joseph as a coal miner. John Brown and several members of his family were involved in coal mining.

John Brown has an interesting history. At the time of his second marriage he had six children from his first marriage to Ellen Evans, who was born in Madras, India. According to military records, they were married in 1884 in Madras, while John was serving in the British military. There were no births shown in India, but after they returned to Nottinghamshire they had one child Liz (1893) in Southport, Lancashire, the probable location of the army/navy base where John would have returned to from India. They then moved home to Hucknall, Torkard, Nottinghamshire where they had their other five children. In the 1911 census, Ellen was still alive with her younger five children, eldest daughter Lizzie having left home. Ellen was shown as a coal miner below on setter, like her husband, and both John Thomas (17) and James (15) were coal miners below on setter, and below horse driver respectively, which I took to mean that they worked underground, setting a jack hammer or driving the horse-drawn coal carts. Ellen died in the second

quarter of 1911 - she was 49 years old. The other four children were Thomas (12), Percy (9), Willy (6) and Nelly (4). So when Catherine met John, she was taking on a big family.

John was born in the little twin towns of Linby and Papplewick in 1862 - these towns are on the edge of the famous Nottingham forest, and his father was described variously as a "woodsman" and a gardener - ie, we have a relative who was a woodsman in Robin Hood's forest! John's parents John and Elizabeth had nine children - John Jr was the second oldest, as shown in the 1881 census. By 1891 John Sr. has died, and Elizabeth was still in Linby, with younger son William (a coal miner), and youngest daughter Annie, who is 19 with a 3 month old baby William.

Like many men in the area, John Brown spent much of his post-military life coal mining, as the major collieries of the Leam Valley, including the Hucknall Colliery (1861-1943) and the second shaft (1865-1986), the Annesley colliery to the west, and the Linby Colliery to the east, provided employment for much of the population, including John and his sons.

We don't know much about how Catherine lived with her large new family, and unhealthy son William, but I do know that my father never wanted to return to England to visit them. In 1938 Catherine killed herself in her home - there was a coronor's inquest, and the following is his report, as published in the Nottingham Evening Post newspaper dated 23rd February, 1938. The article read

"STRANGLED IN GAS-FILL ROOM

EAST KIRKBY WIFE'S SUICIDE DUE TO ILL HEALTH

An East Kirkby retired miner described at the inquest yesterday, his unavailing efforts to revive his wife, whom he found lying in bed in a gas-filled room, with a silk scarf tied round her neck. A verdict of "Suicide by strangulation while the balance of her mind was disturbed owing to illness" was returned on Mrs. Catherine Brown, 68, of 33, Derby Road, East Kirkby. (This is the same address they lived in 25 years earlier when she was corresponding with her son, my father, in the Barnardo's home).

John Brown told the coroner, Mr. H. Bradwell, that his wife had been suffering from nerves and from which she had complained considerably.

On Sunday evening he left home at about 7:15 when he left in the house his son and daughter-in-law. On returning at about 10:15 when his son had left, he shouted upstairs and getting no reply he went up and found his wife lying in bed with a silk scarf tied round her neck three times and knotted, with the room smelling of gas and a candle burning near the bed. He opened the windows and made every effort to revive his wife without avail.

John Thomas Brown, miner of 77 Albert Street, Hucknall, the step-son, said his mother appeared to be in her usual state of health and he left her at about 8:30 when she remarked upon being all right apart from the "ringing of bells noise" in her head, of which she had often complained".

My mother had the impression that Dad's mother was quite mentally ill at least at the end of her life. It seems unlikely to me that she could get remarried and look after seven children for many years, always living in the same residence at 33 Derby Rd if in fact she was suffering from a serious mental illness. There is always that possibility - there was a mental hospital facility in Bethnall Green quite close to the Barnardo facility in London, so I have wondered if my father might have first been introduced to Barnardo's while staying there temporarily while his mother received treatment for mental illness. I do consider this most unlikely, as it seems she was coping with housekeeping for widowers with many children, which requires some mental stability, and the ability to sell yourself and your abilities. Neither the coronor's report nor the newspaper article mention what illness she was suffering from that caused her to take her own life.

MY UNCLE "BERTIE" ASH AND HIS FAMILY - MY COUSINS

Uncle "Bertie", my father's brother, was the one who was too weak to qualify for going to Canada - the one his mother chose to keep with her. William Albert Ash was born on 24 Nov 1902, also in 15 York St, Rugby, and suffered through the same ugly childhood as my Dad - but his was a more tragic life. He lived to adulthood, and found himself a profession and a marriage. He remained in or near Nottingham his whole life, marrying Linda Hannah Worley on Apr 15, 1933 - my mother's 25th

birthday. They lived at 335 Hucknall Lane, which is an attractive looking row house on a main street at the outskirts of Nottingham, on the road to the village of Hucknall about a mile away.

Linda's father George Worley was a General Carter, and died in World War I when Linda was only eight years old. He was married to Mary Ellen Green in 1897 in Peterborough, Northamptonshire - she was born nearby, whereas George was from Yorkshire. Linda was the fifth of their six children, all born in Peterborough. Linda's mother Mary Ellen Green was born in late 1878 in Peterborough. In 1881 Mary was living with her grandmother Mary Green. Her grandfather William Green had passed away, leaving his widow Mary with 9 children from age 6-27, and two young children, who I have assumed belonged to the eldest daughter Sarah A, Linda's grandmother.

Bertie and Linda had two children in Hucknall - daughter Linda Audrey born about Aug 1933, and James Reginald William George Ash born 3 Jan 1937. Sadly, Bertie died of pulmonary tuberculosis on 4 Jul 1941, a year before I was born. Bertie was recorded as a "boot repairer". At the time the family lived at 17 Abbot's Road, Hucknall, only a mile or two from both his mother's home on Derby Rd, and the villages of Linby and Papplewick where his step-father was born. His wife claimed that he made a beautiful pair of shoes.

Bertie's wife Linda lived to the age of eighty six, passing away in the first quarter of 1994 near Nottingham - her funeral took place in the Salvation Army hall in Hucknall. She was living at the Springfield Nursing Home in nearby Bulwell, and this was her obituary: "ASH - Linda Hannah. Passed away 13th February 1994 at Springfield Nursing home Bulwell. Funeral service at the Salvation Army hall, High Street, Hucknall on Thursday 17th at 11:00 am, prior to cremation at Mansfields crematorium at 11:45am. - Enquiries to W. Bexon Limited, Portland Road, Hucknall, Nottingham. 6002 680884".

Her son James signed her death registration - he was living at 14 Booth's Close, St Ann's, Nottingham. I was able to Google the address and find a real estate ad showing a nice apartment in a heritage building - amusingly, when I asked the real estate agent if my cousin was the seller, he never answered, but a few months later I started receiving emails about properties for sale in Nottingham! The death registration showed

that William's widow died of Chronic Obstructive Airways Disease, and secondarily from leukemia. Curiously, James gave his father's name as "Reginald Ash, cobbler, 16 Shaw Cres. Hucknall, Nottingham". - this took me aback, as it is my father's name. James must have been confused about his middle names - he was only four when his Dad died. "Bertie" must have missed his brother, as he gave his son his name James Reginald before his own name William, and his father-in-law's name George.

Bertie's daughter Linda got married on Dec 22 1951 to Leonard Mitchell, a miner, whose father is Samuel Mitchell, a stoker, who lived at 11 Norman Close. Audrey gave her address as 20 Shaw Cres, similar to the address James gave on his mother's death certificate, so I am guessing this is where his family grew up after their father had died. It is a solid looking brick townhouse in a housing development with outside parking, in Hucknall on the edge of Nottingham.

Leonard's mother Druscilla Corris is interesting because she was born on the Isle of Man, and her parents were John Corris born in 1871 in Peel, Isle of Man and Lavinia Acheson, born 1871 on Douglas, Isle of Man, and they were two of the first people showing on the parish registers on the Isle of Man. I have traced Leonard's father Samuel Mitchell back another generation - his parents were John Mitchell born in 1816 in Culmanhay, Derbyshire, and Angelina Jackson, born in Basford in 1831, married in 1851. He married Ada Townsend in Nottingham - like him, she was born in Radford, Nottinghamshire in 1876 - her parents John and Emily Caunt were both born in Nottinghamshire, and married in Nottingham in 1863.

Linda and Leonard had two children - Helen and Jeffrey, and they had the misfortune of becoming orphans, as first Linda died around 1957, when Jeffrey was only 1, and Helen 5; then, after marrying Constance Graves in late 1957, Leonard also died in 1961. I was able to discover this because the genealogy advisors at the Family Search Library in Salt Lake City suggested that I Google Linda Ash and her birth date, and I found Leonard's second marriage and death in "Julie's Genealogy Page" - she must have been related to the Graves family, and they didn't know or were unwilling to talk about what happened to my orphaned cousins.

There were quite a few possible marriages for Helen and Jeffrey, but the only one that was at all close to Nottingham was Helen's marriage to

Geoffry P. Hoggard, in Basford, in the fourth quarter of 1968.

Meanwhile, I had found that James did have a family, having married Edna Whitworth in Nottingham, on March 18, 1960. It seems they may have had a son Barry A D in Nottingham on 10 Sep 1964. Their marriage certificate gives their address as 8 Burns Street, Nottingham, and their occupations as Labourer at the Sawmills, with Edna being a hospital kitchen aid. Her father George Samuel Whitworth, was a labourer at the Aerodrome.

I thought I would never be able to find my first cousin or find out what happened to Helen and Jeffrey, when I came across the Family Finding Service operated by the Salvation Army. Since my Aunt had her funeral service in the Salvation Army hall in Hucknall in 1994, I had high hopes that they could find my great uncle's family. After most of a year, they were able to find my cousins James RWG Ash, and his niece Helen Hoggard, and finally I was contacted by Helen's son Daniel Hogg, who set us up as Facebook friends. They sent me a picture - it looks like Helen was visiting her uncle in a care home.

My first cousin and I have never been able to speak - Daniel says he is very shy, and has been a loner most of his life. It seems he was living alone in Nottingham at the time his aunt died in 1994 - so I suspect his marriage ended badly, and his son didn't survive. I suspect that he is suffering from dementia now. Sadly, Helen herself has had brain cancer for six years, and seems to have taken a turn for the worse. Daniel has promised to keep me informed, and offered to assist in my search for other cousins if I tell him what to do. I am thinking of sending him a list of possible descendants of Dinah's two children Arthur and Charles, of Catherine's youngest brother's children, including two maiden aunts living in Tamworth in the 1990s, and maybe some of the descendants of William Ash with the more unusual names, and ask him to do some phoning.

So, for now, my history of the Ash family in England is complete, and I turn to my mother's Redmond family and their long history living around Prospect and St Margaret's Bay, just south of Halifax. We rejoin the family with David Redmond's children and their inter-marriage with his friend John Umlah's family in the late eighteenth century.

THE REDMOND FAMILY IN CANADA

We return to David Redmond of Prospect, Nova Scotia, and the young family he had with Mary Devereux, and also to his friends John Umlah and William Coolen and their children, who were to bring us the next generation of Redmond descendants. Thomas Redmond married Nancy Umlah, John's daughter and had four children. His sister Margaret married John Umlah Jr, and their children together with Thomas' wife and son James moved around the corner from Shad Bay and Prospect to Seabright on St Margaret's Bay.

ST MARGARET'S BAY - THREE GENERATIONS OF REDMONDS

The area where our Redmond family chose to settle is on the wild Atlantic coast south of Halifax. It is a coastline of many peninsulas with fishing villages at their tips, extending out from Halifax to outports in Herring Bay, Sambro, Terence Bay, Prospect Bay, Shad Bay, East Dover and Peggy's Cove. Most of the Catholic Redmonds stayed on the ocean side near Shad Bay, and married into the families that inhabited these Atlantic outports. In 1794, Prospect was the site of the first Catholic church on the Eastern Shore, Our Lady of Mt Carmel. This was due to the effort of Rev. James Jones who then had charge of the Missions in Nova Scotia. The erection of the first church at Prospect was the source of great joy and consolation to those faithful souls who had come from Ireland. Their births and marriages were recorded in this church starting in 1794, but only the records after 1823 have survived. I have just learned that this wonderful old church is being closed down and sold in 2014 - a victim of the declining population of the tiny town of Prospect.

Just south of Peggy's Cove lies the wide and deep St Margaret's Bay, 20 km long and 15 km across, and along the north shore are the villages of Indian Harbour, Hackett's Cove, Glen Margaret, French River and Seabright - all villages created by fishermen. In the late 1700s and early

1800s there were virtually no roads, so most transportation was by sea. The area between St Margaret's Bay and Halifax is wild and remote, dotted with numerous lakes. The main road access between Halifax and Lunenburg bypassed this peninsula, and passed by the head of St. Margaret's Bay through Chester Basin (where the Umlah family originally settled), Mahone Bay and Lunenburg, south to the mouth of the La Have river where Judith Moser's family lived, and up the river to Bridgewater. The area was occupied by the Mik'Maq Indians, primarily seasonally for the fishing - these Indians were originally allies of the French in the French Indian wars, but became more friendly by the 1800s.

The land is not fertile, and is difficult land on which to support a family, so most farmers supplemented their income through fishing. There were many rocks to be removed, and grazing land was only suitable for a few sheep. There were no sandy beaches on the northern shorelines of St Margaret's Bay where our ancestors lived. However, it is at least as good as the land around Lunenburg where the Protestant settlers were propagating, so in 1780 Governor Parr encouraged these settlers and their growing families to settle St Margaret's Bay. This was when the Umlah family moved to the land near Seabright which was to house several generations of the Protestant branch of the Redmond family.

The Chebucto peninsula between Halifax on the north and St Margaret's Bay on the south was scraped by glaciers, leaving many interesting rock formations, but almost no soil, so even the evergreen trees are scrub bushes. The peninsula has many many lakes and bogs - it is interesting to read the description of ([Old St Margaret's Bay Road](#)), which is now a wonderful 30 km walking trail from Glen Margaret on St Margaret's Bay across the peninsula to Spryfield, a suburb of Halifax. The road passes several hills and properties named after the Umlah family, and gives a good sense of how remote this area is, and how full of moose and deer. This road and the road to Prospect were the original roads built just after 1800.

In the 1827 census, many of the people of the Lunenburg pioneer families have migrated to St Margaret's Bay - names like Isnor, Wambolt, several Boutilier families, Dauphinee, Hubley and Covey. James Croucher, son of David's Newfoundland friend lived near Glen Margaret. Coves are named after the first settlers - Boutilier's Point, Mosher Cove,

Redmond's Cove, Hubley Cove.

At least two books have been written about the early days on the Bay. "St. Margaret's Bay - A History", a book by Alfreda Withrow, is available at the Vancouver Public Library 971.622 W82b. It outlines some of the early censuses: In the 1752 census there were only 35 temporary residents. In 1785 the first settler land grants were issued - one to James Croucher from Newfoundland - but mostly to children of the Lunenburg Protestants and Loyalist settlers from the U.S. In the 1793 Poll Tax assessment there are 59 families, including John Sr., John Jr, James and William Hemlow (Umlah) - John's children moved here from Chester in 1780. David Redmond was in the 1791 Prospect Poll Tax list. By 1817 the St Margaret's Bay poll tax survey included 506 families.

The early Protestant churches included St Paul's Anglican in French Village, originally built in 1824 and rebuilt in 1863, its Pioneer Cemetery begun in 1794. In 1840 St Peter's Anglican Church was built in Hackett's Cove (rebuilt in 1870). The cemetery contains a few Redmonds, but most were buried in Redmond's Cemetery at Seabright, which was donated from Umlah land. There was a small school and a "meeting house" in Seabright, which schooled James Redmond's children. The William Black Methodist/United Church was built in Glen Margaret in 1821, named after the first Nova Scotian methodist minister.

The first road to Prospect was built by prisoners from Melville prison - one prisoner's account is " In 1812, I received permission to go out and work on the Prospect Road. Twenty or thirty of us were divided into teams of ten or twelve, and we worked under British overseers. Our food was brought from Melville Prison twice a week, and we slept in the overseers' houses. I remained there for three months, earning one shilling, three pence, a day. On Sundays we visited each other. One week we visited our companions in their lodgings, and the next week, they visited us. Some Sundays, we went to see our fellow inmates at the prison; other weeks, we went to Mass at Prospect. " Railways and highways around St Margaret's Bay weren't built until the end of the nineteenth century, but the communities were never more than half an hour boat ride apart.

In the latter half of the 1800s, the community became a popular tourist area. The Mason family built the Prince of Wales Hotel at the Head of St

Margaret's Bay that provided a stopping place for passing mail coaches, offering many prominent gentlemen from Halifax a place for sport and relaxation. It became famous after hosting the Prince of Wales on a hunting trip. The hotel burned down in a spectacular fire on Mar 20, 1939.

The other book "As The Leaf Falls" by Barbara (Mason) Peart is an interesting history of St. Margaret's Bay. The Mason family lived at Head of St. Margaret's Bay, well away from where our ancestors lived, so there are not too many direct references to our family, just a picture of Joe and Mary Redmond, who so far I haven't identified as one of ours (another large Redmond family came in the 1840s to the Chezzetcook area north of Dartmouth).

The book gives a good feel for the Bay and its history, based on many interviews with the older members of the St. Margaret's Bay folk, mainly around Head of St. Margaret's Bay. The pictures I have copied include the local churches, hotels and lighthouses and stories about the Prince of Wales hotel/resort and its famous fire; the Halifax Explosion; and the Swissair crash. I have kept the pages on the James Croucher family and the Croucher lighthouse, The "Sally" ship to Lunenburg that brought some of the other Coullins, and a story about meeting Kaiser Wilhelm II.

The biggest prize, however, was a land map of French Village in the mid-1850s, with all of the owners marked. It shows Redmond land at Seabright, just around the bay, and John Umlah senior's land.

Our family never seemed to get into logging, but it was a major employer in the late eighteenth century. The biggest mill was at Head of St. Margaret's Bay at Todd's Island (originally Sheep's Island) – Todd and Porley's. There was a major fire on Aug 18 1928, with most of the lumber burning, but the mill was saved. Then it was sold to Lewis Miller, who built a new mill at Ingram River. Smaller lumber operations existed much earlier, such as John George Dauphinee's sawmill, and a sawmill by the Woodens of Glen Margaret (their land is shown on the land map). The Slauenwhites were also a milling family, particularly James Henry (1851-1911).

The earliest school was at French Village, and the largest one was at

Boutilier's Point – many of the children getting there by boat.

The Rhyno family was a big American land baron at Head of St. Margaret's Bay.

There is a story about John Fraser III, from a loyalist family, who met James Boutilier while driving oxen to Halifax along the logging road short-cut. James was so taken by the young man that he offered to give him some land to move nearby in French Village, and subsequently young Fraser married one of his daughters. He and Susan Boutilier are buried in the St Peter's cemetery at Hackett's Cove.

Indian River was on the route between Lunenburg and Halifax in the early days, and it was patrolled by the military because of the large numbers of deserters from the Halifax regiment – guess life was pretty scary in Halifax in the 1700s. Loftus Mason was one of the officers who patrolled there, later joining the Northwest RCMP for a few years, and ultimately was a foreman in the construction of the Halifax-Lunenburg road that went around St. Margaret's Bay.

THE REDMOND/UMLAH FAMILIES OF THOMAS AND MARGARET

It all began with David Redmond and John Umlah's friendship. Frank Redmond tells a story that took place during the period of the American Revolution, when American ships enjoyed sailing into Nova Scotian bays to wreak havoc among the settlers. One night John and David commandeered a ship while its crew was partying on shore, and hid it in Holger's river, then cleaned out all the brass before returning the ship to the Bay. John was also a witness to David's second marriage to Judith Moser.

David and Mary Devereux had six children, with his son Thomas and daughter Margaret being baptized in St Paul's in Jul 24, 1770. They weren't twins - remember that the Catholic church was forbidden to exist at this time, so the baptisms would have been done some time after the births by a travelling priest from St Paul's. Their sister Catherine was baptized 18 Nov 1773, and probably is the Catherine Redmond who

married James Barry in St. Paul's on 10 Jun 1801. They also had a sister Rebecca stillborn on 10 Jan 1781, one week before her mother's death, probably from complications from child birth. Three other Redmond children were recorded in St Paul's burials in the intervening 8 years - Ann Redman on 9 March 1777, Christopher Redmand on 6 Sep 1779, and Margaret Redmond on 19 Jan 1780 - we have no evidence of any other Redmond marriage in that period.

The children of John and David were also pretty friendly, as David's son Thomas married John's daughter Nancy (Ann) about 1788, and John's son John Jr married David's daughter Margaret in a double wedding on Dec 7 1784, the same day that David Redmond married his second wife Judith Moser, with the marriage by license recorded in St. Paul's Halifax. It seems likely that Margaret was older than Thomas.

Thomas was a fisherman, like his father, and lived on Redmond's Island when tragedy struck. Here are three versions: First, on the Shad Bay web-site: "Redmond's Island is named after David Redmond who kept his fishing plakes there for drying the fish. In the 1700s Redmond Island could only be reached at low tide when oxen could haul hay and other necessities to the island. Once, while Thomas Redmond and his son escorted officers of the Imperial Garrison in Halifax out to hunt duck, a wind blew into a gale and the tide rose. By nightfall Thomas Redmond and the group had not returned and the island was isolated by the high tide. At daylight, Mrs. Redmond searched for them with her two younger sons and daughter. For nine days they searched the shore and on the 9th day, they found her husband's body at Selig's Landing. It is said that with the help of friendly Mi'kmaq, who came to the area for the fishing, she buried her husband.

The widowed Mrs. Redmond moved with her 3 children to Shad Bay, three and a half miles away by rowboat, taking what goods they could manage. With the help of Mi'kmaq, they constructed a log cabin in Shad Bay."

A second more detailed version was handed down by the Collier family, and is contained in the big blue binder of research by Noella Fisher: "Some of the Officers and men of the Garrison would ride outside the boundaries of the city (Halifax) for the sport of hunting and fishing. Following the shoreline, from the western side, they would reach

Prospect Bay. They made the acquaintance of the Redmond family and Thomas Redmond would take them by boat around the shore for the sport of duck hunting.

One autumn day, so the Collier story goes, one of the garrison officers rode his horse to visit the Redmond family on Redmond's Island. "On this day he hired Thomas Redmond to take him duck hunting, as they had many times before. Redmond made ready the boat, got the guns and they started off fully expecting to get a nice bag of game. After awhile, the sky darkened, the wind blew into a gale, the tide rose and a stormy sea was pounding. By nightfall the men had not returned and Redmond's Island was isolated by the high tide. Mrs. Redmond and her two sons and a daughter, waited up until daylight until the tide receded. Then she started out to walk the shoreline in search of her husband. For nine days she walked that shoreline from Prospect to Shad Bay and on the ninth day, she found the body on the shore of Selig's Landing. Realizing that she and her children couldn't exist alone on that barren Redmond Island, she took her three children and what household chattels she could load into a boat and rowed the three miles to Shad Bay. There they built a log cabin before winter set in and thereby became the first settlers of Shad Bay" At that time many of the Garrison were deserting, some marrying Indian maidens as there were not that many white families. Both the Redmond boys married; one a Laidlaw from Dartmouth. How this match was made is unknown. The Redmond daughter married a deserter by the name of Coolen and settled there in Shad Bay.

A third version coming from the Harnish and Isnor branches of the family suggests that Thomas was the son of William, and not David ... "The Redmonds came down from William who was a British soldier. He and his brother lived on Redmond's Island in Prospect Harbour. They sold the property in 1774 to Thomas Cochrane, a merchant in Halifax. I have a feeling that they were indebted to this man. William's son Thomas who married Nancy Umlah, purchased 1100 acres in Shad Bay (1809), which included all of Shad Bay, most of Bayside, and the large (Cochrane) Island which lay between the two.

Thomas had taken some soldiers from Halifax duck hunting and they all drowned. Her wife Nancy searched the shores of Prospect for two weeks before she found his body ashore at Selig's landing (an area between Prospect and Shad Bay). Nancy moved back to Glen Margaret with her

family afterwards. I come from their eldest son David, who married Mary Christian (Irish Catholic) from Prospect"

This account seems to be in error about Thomas being William's son, as his baptism shows David as his father, but it is possible that David had a brother William who was in the military. If the story of being a deserter was true, that may account for his name not appearing in the 1791 Poll Tax list for Prospect. The sale of Redmond's Island as early as 1774 is also suspect because of the maps on the Prospect web-site, and the fact that Thomas & Nancy were living there at the time of his death.

Thomas' daughter Mary married William Frederick Coolen, son of David's friend from Newfoundland who had lived at the point of Upper Prospect next to Redmond's Island, and had helped James Croucher to work his farm in St Margaret's Bay. Thomas had interests in land on the ocean at Shad Bay, land which was transferred to Thomas' four children later in the 1840s. Noella Fisher has found a land grant made by William Coolen Sr. in 1808, which indicates that he had two sons and three daughters, that he and his son were fishermen, that he was born in Newfoundland and came to Nova Scotia as a boy, and that he was employed in the Engineer's department of the Halifax Garrison in his youth.

For some reason lost in the reaches of time Thomas Redmond lived his entire marriage without creating any church records, not for his marriage, not for his childrens' births nor for his death. He and Nancy had four children - David, Mary, James William and Thomas. We know from the Coolen bible that Mary and William Coolen had their first child in 1813, so we suspect they were married around 1812, and Thomas probably 1811 or earlier. It is possible that his family was recorded in the nearby Our Lady of Mount Carmel church which began in 1794, but no records before 1823 have survived. All of the stories of Thomas death feature Nancy searching with her three children - which makes me think that her fourth child Thomas, born in 1808, was still a baby - so Thomas Sr.' death was probably around 1810.

I don't know how long Nancy Redmond and her family stayed in Shad Bay. Her mother Isabella passed away in 1813, and her brother John Jr. & Margaret had land in Seabright given from the family homestead where the Umlahs had lived since completing their family in 1779 in

Chester and taking over the Seabright land in 1780. At some point her brother William sold she and Thomas a piece of the Seabright land. Thomas and Nancy's eldest son David was already established and nearly thirty years old, and their daughter Mary was married to William Coolen Jr in Shad Bay, so they stayed in the Shad Bay land while Nancy moved to Seabright with her two younger sons James William (our line) and Thomas.

Thomas married into the Ruder family (Elizabeth), another of the German Protestant families from Lunenburg who moved to St Margaret's bay in the 1780s. Elizabeth's parents were Michael Ruder and Sarah Elizabeth Dauphinee, and he was born in 1776, but neither his birth nor his parents marriages are in the Shankel transcription of the Lunenburg church records. The Ruders were a large family, with the first five (Mary Elizabeth, Nellie, Polly, William and John) baptized in St John's in Lunenburg, and Sarah and William's marriages to Truemans were recorded in St Margaret's Bay Anglican (St Paul's). I haven't verified Elizabeth's baptism. There was a Hendrick Ruder on the 1752 "Sally" voyage, a weaver from the Palatinates. Brian Hiscock shows his parents as John Gottlieb and Barbara Ruder from Hamburg, coming on the "Gale" in 1751, but they aren't on the online list. Thomas and Elizabeth were married in French Village in 1836 in the St Paul's Anglican church, but later moved back to Thomas' land in Shad Bay, and his descendants were largely Catholic.

We leave the Catholic branch of the Redmond and Coolen families for now - we will pursue their line leading to our fourth cousins later. For now we will pursue the families of the strong protestant women who married into the Redmond line - first the Umlahs (Thomas); then the Boutilliers (James Sr.); then the Bishops (James Jr.) and finally the McKays (Howard).

THE UMLAH FAMILY - FIFTH COUSINS

John and Isabella had 11 children, mostly during their time in Chester. They had three sons. John and James were born in Pennsylvania, and were fishermen - and William was their youngest son. The Umlahs

migrated to three distinct areas around the land settled by the three sons. John and James made frequent fishing trips up and down the Atlantic coastline, and on one of the trips James bought some land around the St Mary's River in Guysborough county, some sixty miles north of Halifax. John Jr was the eldest son, but wasn't favored by his father, who left his Seabright land to his youngest son William, several of his daughters, and John Jr's sons. John Jr's children grew up with the children of Nancy's son James, our ancestor in St Margaret's Bay. William became a farmer, and bought land near Goodwood. He had fourteen children, many of whom stayed in that area - one great grand-daughter married into the Bishop family, our third cousins. William sold the land his father had gifted him during his lifetime to Thomas Redmond & Nancy when he moved to a larger farm in Goodwood.

Nancy also had six sisters, who all married, and most chose to live near one of their brothers:

- Margaret married John McDougall 25 Feb 1784, recorded in St Paul's, so we are not sure where they lived. He left a will in 1818.
- Elizabeth married Alexander Renfrew in 1793, recorded in St Paul's in Halifax. Their family lived in Hackett's Cove, and they were buried in St Peter's Cemetery.
- Mary married John Wagner in 1808. John also had a large property near Goodwood. He sold part of his land to Peter Toler when he married Sarah Jane, Mary's younger sister, and all of his descendants are buried there, including John Umlah, one of William's sons who married a Toler daughter. The Purcell cemetery on his land have all of Peter Toler's & Sarah Jane's immediate descendants. One of the neighbouring farms belonged to John Umlah & Caroline Warner, one of William's sons.
- Sarah Jane married Peter Toler (b. 1776) in 1813, and lived next to sister Mary and John Wagner. Her daughter Isabella married a Marriott, and is buried in the Marriott cemetery in Goodwood.
- Isabella married Waldon Corney in St Stephen's in Chester, the only child who chose to live in the community where they were born. They had four children in 1778-1788 in Chester.
- Charlotte married Jacob Johnson in 1822, recorded in St Paul's Halifax, but lived in St Margaret's Bay and were buried in the Redmond cemetery on the Umlah land in Seabright.

The cousin who has done the definitive research on the Umlah family is Iris V Shea, who is also the woman who first showed me that I was descended from David Redman. Through her emails I have learned a great deal about the Umlah family, as has Margie Buckholdt of Seattle who is descended from James' branch (from St Mary's in Guysborough Co.). Iris has done a family history of William Umlah, the Goodwood farmer, for the Prospect communities web-site, as follows:

William Umlach

Researched and compiled by Iris V. Shea

To View William's Family Tree

<http://history.prospectcommunities.com/families/umlah/familytree.html>

William Umlach was born 14 March 1770 and baptized at St. Stephen's Anglican Church in Chester, Nova Scotia, the son of John and Isabella Umlach of Scotland. At the age of ten years he moved with his parents and nine siblings to the east side of St. Margaret's Bay, in the area known as Seabright. "Umlah Road" in Seabright is located on John Umlach's original land. While his two older brothers, John and James, followed the sea in their younger years, William stayed on the land, helping to run the family farm until he married and established his own farm in Goodwood, Halifax County, N.S. The spelling of the name changed frequently, but it was not until after William's death in 1839 that "Umlah" became the accepted spelling for future generations of this line. Another spelling, "Hemlow," was used by the descendants of two of William's nine sons. William's brother, James, who had settled in St. Mary's River, Guysborough County, had already experienced a change in the spelling of his name, and that entire line continues to be known as "Hemlow".

William married (1) 16 Sept. 1797 Mary Anne Wagner whose German father, Thomas Wagner, received a grant of land bordering the western side of Long Lake, near Goodwood. Mary Anne was baptized at St. Paul's Church, Halifax, 23 July 1776. Her mother, Barbara Wilt, was born in Lunenburg. Mary Anne died 18 Jan. 1822 at the age of 42 following the birth of her fourteenth child. Her fourteen children inherited a portion of

the Long Lake grant which her father had received in 1773. Mary Anne's brother, John Wagner, married William's Umlach's sister Mary. They had no children and John sold his portion of the Long Lake Grant, in addition to land he had purchased, to his great nephew, John Umlah. The Umlah heirs remained on the land until 1954 when it was expropriated by the Public Service Commission. John Umlah and his wife, Ellen (Drysdale), named one of their sons "John Wagner" Umlah.

William married (2) 26 March 1824, Mary Ann Schwartz, widow of William Schwartz. Two more daughters were born, but there is no record of their survival beyond birth. Mary Ann died 4 May 1827, age 42 (St. Paul's, Halifax).

William married (3) 22 June 1829, Mary Ann McGrath, widow of John McGrath of St. Margaret's Bay, and daughter of Joseph and Mary Ann Peters. Mary Ann McGrath was the mother of eleven children, ten of whom were living at the time of her marriage to William Umlach. She died 10 June 1857 in Goodwood at the age of 78. Three of her children married three of William's Umlach's children.

The Second of the three Umlah land areas was by the St Mary's River in Guysborough. James, middle brother also born in Pennsylvania, married Ann McDonald (McDaniel?) in 1795 in Hackett's Cove, but after their second child, they moved to his property by St Mary's River and had four more children. They had two islands in the mouth of the river - Amelia and Hemlow. He and his descendants were the first to use the different spelling of his surname - Hemlow. James' niece Ann, daughter of John Jr Umlah and Margaret Redmond, met her first Irish husband Thomas O'Mara, a fisherman from Co. Wexford Ireland in St Mary's, marrying him and moving there to the blustery coast/cape of the St Mary's River in 1813, with the help of her Uncle James. Sadly, Thomas had not been used to the fishing, and when they were only married a couple of years, he was out at Trunk Rock getting in his nets (near the cape) and drowned.

Ann remarried a friend of her late husband, named Thomas Byrnes, also from Wexford, Ireland. The story of their branch of the family comes from Margie Buckholdt of Seattle (mhbuckholdt@mytangleweb.com), who is the great great granddaughter of Ann & Thomas Byrnes (we are fifth cousins once removed). She says that Thomas Byrnes was one of

many who left Ireland and first went to Newfoundland, then shortly after came to Nova Scotia. His story has it that he jumped ship while leaving Newfoundland, and landed up in Nova Scotia. This is one of the reasons I think that this is how David Redmond came to the new world as well, probably on a ship servicing the fishing fleet in the Grand Banks. Margie is related through Ann's son Thomas, who married Susanna Penny of Newfoundland, their daughter Martha who married Roderick McKay, and their son John McKay, Margie's father.

Ann's sister Catherine also inherited land near Sonora, Guysborough county, probably from their Uncle James, who helped Ann and Margaret to get established there. She married Henry McDaniel, and had many children (and they had many McDaniel and Archibald descendants), before he also was lost at sea while fishing.

The third group of Umlahs were those who stayed on the Umlah land in Seabright - John Jr. and Margaret Redmond and their eleven children who were raised nearby, and so grew up with our James Redmond and his family. Of these, five married and settled nearby on St Margaret's Bay, two died in Halifax on the same day, one moved to Prospect, two to St Mary's River, and one moved around a lot, sprinkling children all over. In order of birth, they are:

- Mary (1786-1811) married James Hearn, a fisherman, who acquired land in Upper Prospect on a hill over-looking the Prospect village, called Kelly's Point. She has the only stone in Kelly's cemetery, in one corner of James' land. His son, also James, left a very interesting will, showing much about the life of a fishing family where one son gets the land and another the fishing boat, and the daughters are left smaller sums - I will show it at the end of the list
- Elizabeth (1789-1867) married George Verge in 1807. They had 11 children, moving between St Margaret's Bay, Mill Cove in Lunenburg and St Mary's River. Charles (a cooper), Margaret (husband a mariner) married and lived in St Margaret's Bay, and Henry (1840) and Mary Elizabeth (1855) married two Boutillier children who were siblings, both first cousins once removed to James Redmond's wife Elizabeth Mary Catherine. The four sons who moved away had bad luck, all dying single in their twenties -

- two in Lunenburg, and the other two on the same day in Halifax.
- Margaret (1790-1872) married Francis Saul in 1818 in Hackett's Cove. After his death she married Thomas Simmonds in Prospect.
 - Ann (1793-1848) we have discussed already - she married two Irishmen and moved to St Mary's River, joining her uncle James Hemlow.
 - Catherine (1795-1867) married Henry McDaniel in 1811, and also went to St Mary's River - he may have been related to James Umlah's wife Ann/Nancy
 - Rebecca (1801-1837) married Thomas McDaniel, had children in St Margaret's bay, but died in St Mary's River
 - John Umlah III (1796-1873) married Barbara Boutilier, another first cousin of our Mary Catherine, James Redmond's wife. They had a son John Peter (1835-1910) who married another Boutilier, Isabella who is a first cousin twice removed to Mary Catherine. So the Boutilier and Umlah families have a long history of inter-marriage, probably because they were almost the only families living in Seabright.
 - Amelia (?-) married Henry Boutilier in 1824, another first cousin of Mary Catherine.
 - Isabella(1799-1893) married John David Moore in 1825, and had six daughters. They are buried in St. Peter's cemetery in Hackett's Cove, along with half a dozen younger males, which indicates John must have had a brother who had mainly sons. She lived to the ripe old age of 93 - her husband was 80.
 - David (1805-1867) was a farmer, and married Eleanor Drysdale, having seven daughters and two sons living in Seabright. They both died young in the 1860s and are buried in St. Peter's cemetery in Hackett's Cove. One of their daughters Isabel is buried in Redmond's Cemetery. She married William Mahar - he and his son Horace were traders in cattle and fish. One of Horace's children Edward drowned after falling from a boat - his death was documented by Eric B Pace J.P, another Redmond descendant. Horace's brother Ralph was a teamster who moved to BC, dying in Powell River. Most of the family stayed in Glen Margaret for their whole lives, and are buried in the Catholic St Margaret's cemetery.
 - Maria was the only child to remain unmarried (1807-1867)

Mary's marriage to fisherman James Hearn was interesting because she was given such a prominent grave marker by her husband at Kelly's Point, but also to see her son James' will, which shows much about how the fishing families in the area lived during the mid 1800s. I have included it here:

" Proved on Tuesday the 19th day of December A.D. 1871 upon the depos. of Michael Tobin one of the subscribed witnesses.

~ A WILL ~

In the name of God, Amen, The sixteenth day of December in the year of Our Lord One thousand eight hundred and sixty one, I James Hearn Senior, of the Parish or Settlement of Upper Prospect of County of Halifax, Province of Nova Scotia, Fisherman, being through the blessing of God, in a stout state of mind and memory, but calling to mind the first tenure of life, and that it is appointed to all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last will and testament, that is to say, principally and first of all, I recommend myself into hands of Almighty God, who gave it me, and the disposal of my body I leave to the entire discretion of my friends.

First, I give and bequeath to my dearly beloved son John Hearn, all the right title and interest in all my seines, nets, moorings, boats, bark pots, and other fishing apparatus belonging, or in any appertaining to the same which I now possess or have been using.

Secondly, I also give and bequeath my Dwelling House with its contents, also all the real estate possessed by me in and about said dwelling, with buildings etc., on Kelly's Point (so called), with exception of reservations hereinafter mentioned.

Thirdly, I also give and bequeath to my son William the land on which his Dwelling House stands, also one half the store now occupied by me, also one half the net ground, that he has been in the practice of using, also the land in front of his house for a garden, etc., etc.

Also I will and bequeath to my Daughters, Mary Ann, Franny, Elizabeth, and Ellen, the sum of five pounds currency, each, to be paid by my son John aforesaid, before the expiration of Five years.

Also I will and bequeath the Sum of Twenty Pounds currency, to my son James Hearn, to be paid to him, out of a debt due me by him, for the purchase of a seine, boat, etc., the balance of which I will and bequeath to his mother, at his earliest convenience.

Also with respect to the Island in the neighborhood of Prospect, known as Hearn's Island, (so called), I give and bequeath it to all my children for their general use and benefit.

Also, I will that all, or any small debts due by me to any person or persons at my decease, that the same be paid by my son James as early as circumstances will admit, also that all debts due me be paid into the hands of my said son John.

Finally, I will and bequeath unto my dearly beloved wife, the use of my Dwelling House, with its furniture etc., etc., at the time of my decease, (the law of the province, entitling her to a third of my estate during her natural life), for her sole use and benefit during her natural life, when it is to go, as willed to my son John Hearn as before stated, hoping and expressing my fervent wish, that she and John will occupy the House in peace and harmony, Witness my hand, this sixteenth day of December A.D. 1861

Signed, sealed, published, pronounced, and declared, by the said James Hearn as his last will and testament, in the presence of us the subscribers.

Thomas Tobin J.P. ;John Booth;Michael Tobin

James HEARN"

The family patriarch **John Umlah Sr.** left a very interesting **will** before he passed away in 1821 at the age of 95. The flowery religious language of the will surprised me, as his exploits didn't hint at a love of religion, but then, he did emigrate to Philadelphia where the religious zealots thrived. He proved to be a judgmental man in his old age, disinheriting six of his children Elizabeth Renfrew, Isabella Corney, Margaret Mc Dougall, Jane

Toler, and, surprisingly, his eldest son John, though he did leave a legacy of twenty pounds each to John's sons John and David. His words were "Also, I give and bequeath to my son John Umlach the sum of one shilling and no more, his conduct heretofore having been such as makes him unworthy of my favour".

Our great great great grandmother Nancy Redmond (Umlah) acquired her land at Seabright by purchasing from her brother William the plot of land that their father had given to William after his marriage. William's family was eventually to number fifteen, so apparently he outgrew the Seabright farm and moved to larger digs near Goodwood. When he died John willed that his larger farm on the meadows above the hills was to be sold, except for land around the grave of his beloved wife Isabella, who had passed away eight years earlier. His will required this plot of land to be fenced, and used as a family cemetery, where he was buried next to his wife.

Nancy was one of the four favoured children who split the proceeds from the sale of the farm - about seventy pounds each. The other three were James Umlach, Mary Wagner, and his "well beloved" youngest daughter Charlotte Umlach, who also received his furniture, ten cows and all moveable goods. John lived to see all of his children married except Charlotte, who was to marry Jacob Johnson the following year.

THE BOUTILIER FAMILY - FOURTH COUSIN DESCENDANTS

When my great great grandfather James Redmond moved to Seabright with his mother when she acquired land at Seabright, he entered into a small new community - his wife Mary was from the large Boutilier family. The Umlah land had been granted around 1780, but when James arrived there, the waterfront land had been granted in long strips with narrow frontage (30 acres) on St Margaret's Bay. According to the book "As the Last Leaf Falls", the five of the ten grantees in 1787 were Frederic Boutellier, George Boutellier, Jacque Sr. Boutellier, James Boutellier, and John Boutellier. In the words of brothers John and George Boutellier, "When we moved to French Village we felled trees near the bank for our houses and built where they fell. There were Indian wigwams all

around" It was noted they needed more pasture land for their cattle, and wanted a grant to the land to the rear of their lots - a total of 1500 acres in all.

Now Frederic, George, James and John were all brothers to Mary's father Joseph, and Jacques Sr was Joseph's uncle. Joseph's father Jean George Boutilier was the patriarch of the Boutilier family in the Lunenburg protestant migration of 1752 - his father, also Jean George, owned the boat they came in from Montbeliard, the tiny country that then existed between NE France and Switzerland, but he died during the passage. Jean George Jr died in 1784 at Boutilier's Point, which is directly across St Margaret's Bay from Seabright/French Village. So clearly all of his adult sons decided to go for land grants at Seabright. Mary's father Joseph was still a minor, but would have moved with his older brothers.

But that is not all of the burgeoning Boutilier family, for Jean George also had two brothers with him - he had 15 children, Jean Nicholas had 13 children, and Jacques had 8 children, so when they all moved to St Margaret's Bay in the 1780s, they accounted for a large part of the population! Jean Nicholas' clan also settled in French Village, but more towards Hackett's Cove and the center of French Village - there are numerous Boutiliers buried in both the Pioneer cemetery (St Paul's) in French River and St. Peter's in Hackett's Cove. Just east of Hackett's Cove there is a Boutilier Cove, and of course across the Bay there is Boutilier Point where Jean George died, and later the main school was built. Since all the Boutilier families stuck with about 10 names, usually with one or more middle names, it is difficult to tell them apart, but Bob Hegerich and others seem to have sorted it out, so the Rootsweb World Family Tree contains several family trees that accurately reflect the genealogy of the large Boutilier clan.

Because of the huge size of the Boutilier family, I haven't tried to follow them through the generations to the 1901 and 1911 census and from there to possible living cousins. But the family is very well documented in the World Family Tree (free Rootsweb managed by Ancestry.com), so I'm sure that thousands of living descendants could be found. Bob Hegerich's family tree alone has identified over 25,000 descendants with over a third of them living today. They would all be my fourth, fifth or 6th cousins.

The pocket of five land grants for the Boutilliers is right adjacent to the Umlah land, which is just around the first cove to the east. So it is no surprise, given the small population at Seabright when James Redmond was coming to manhood, that he chose one of the Boutilier daughters, Mary to become his bride.

MY GREAT GREAT GRANDPARENTS FAMILY

James William Redmond, son of Thomas Redmond, moved with his mother to the Umlah land at Seabright, and later married Mary Boutilier on 14 May 1825, recorded by marriage contract in St Paul's Halifax. James was 26, and Mary 19. They were married in Hackett's Cove by Rector Robert Willis, witnessed by George Umlah and James Umlah (probably children of William Umlah). Their family lived on James' mother Ann's land, next to their Umlah cousins on John Jr's land, and just around the corner from Mary's brothers. They had nine children, with only the youngest one, Elizabeth, failing to survive her infancy in 1840. Her mother Mary died only six months later, at barely the age of forty.

The French Village area of the north shore of St Margaret's Bay extends from Seabright on the west to Hackett's Cove on the east, with Glen Margaret nearby. There was a school available in French Village, from 1816, and St Paul's church was founded in 1824 - but it is possible that the Redmond children didn't have to go so far, as a tiny school was established in Seabright in 1828, and there was also a "meeting house" which could have been used for religious services and socializing.

It is natural given the small population around them that the Redmond children would find mates from the largest families living nearby - the Boutilliers, the Isnors (Eisenhauers) the Moores and the Crouchers - all families with large contingents buried in St Peter's, the largest cemetery in the area. By the time the younger children grew up there were more families moved into the area, largely established by fishermen, and the younger Redmonds married into families in Peggy's Cove and left the area. The most interesting family was the Pace family who had emigrated from the US after being on the wrong side in the American Revolution - their story deserves its own chapter. Emily Pace married

the second son David, and their descendants ended up on the ancestral Umlah land, and lived on Redmond Road and beside the Redmond cemetery right down to my living cousin Frank Redmond, whose family only left the area a few years ago. And Emily's brother William Pace married the middle daughter Catherine, and their descendants included some very prominent Halifax judges and politicians.

Let us begin with the relationships with the Croucher, Isnor and Moore families and the Redmonds. James Croucher was one of David Redman (the pioneer fisherman)'s Newfoundland friends. He received a land grant in Hackett's Cove Aug 3, 1784, and in the 1792 poll tax list he is shown to be "CROUCHER, James.....farmer, 6 cattle, 20 sheep.....Newfoundland Irish". It is likely that Sarah and Anne Croucher who married in St Paul's Halifax, Sarah on the same day as David Redmond & Mary Devereux, were James' sisters. According to Roland Norwood, James Croucher was murdered on 9 Feb 1807 in St Margaret's Bay.

James had seven children with Margaret Murphy - three are related to our families: **Ann Susannah** Innes (Croucher) had two sons - John Thomas Innes married James Redmond's second daughter Mary, and Robert Innes married Mary Ann D'Aubin, who was a sister to Richard D'Aubin, husband of James' fourth daughter Margaret. **James William** Croucher married Sarah Boutilier, another first cousin to James Redmond's wife Mary. They had 12 children, including William and Isaac who married Margaret and Amelia Umlah, grand-daughters of Margaret Redmond & John Umlah Jr. Isaac and Amelia's daughter Fanny married Sidney Isnor, eldest son of Anne Redmond. William's son George ran the Croucher lighthouse on St Margaret's Bay, and his grand-daughter Eileen (1915-1983) was still living in Glen Margaret, near Croucher's Cove.

The Isnors are all descended from Johann Adam Eisenhauer, patriarch of the family that includes former US President Dwight D Eisenhower. They came from the Palatinate part of Germany (around the Rhine River), and were one of the families that moved from Lunenburg after 1780, and settled in St Margaret's Bay. James' daughter **Elizabeth** Croucher married John William Eisenhauer, a grandson of Johann, and two of their children Robert and Elizabeth Isnor figure prominently in our family history. Elizabeth married Ebenezer Pace, and was the mother of Emily and William who married David Redmond and Catherine Redmond

respectively. Robert married into the Moore family (see below).

William Isnor married the eldest James Redmond daughter Ann in 1855 at St Peter's in Hackett's Cove. His older sister Barbara was to marry Ann's father James Redmond three years later, to become his third wife after the untimely early death of Mary Boutilier, and later of his second wife Hannah Moore. Their parents were John Eisenhauer (a first cousin of John William above) and Susanna Keyser. When we cover the Catholic side of the Redmond family, we find another Isnor family marrying into the Redmonds.

The Isnor family is very thoroughly researched, probably because of their relationship to Dwight D. Eisenhauer, but the Moore family is less so. We know that one of John Umlah and Margaret Redmond's daughters, and first cousin to James William Redmond, Isabella married John D Moore, and had six daughters. Their eldest daughter Margaret Ann Moore married James' eldest son William Thomas in Hackett's Cove in 1861 - most of the Redmond children were married there in the then new St. Peter's Anglican Church. This is somewhat surprising, as Margaret Ann and William would be first cousins, with the same grandfather Thomas Redmond. Her youngest daughter Mary Jane married Robert Isnor and had a large family in Hackett's Cove.

Judging from the dozen or so male Moores in the St. Peter's cemetery, John must have had brothers or male cousins in St Margaret's Bay. William Moore was the first husband of Hannah Moore, who was to become James' second wife in 1848 - it is likely she had some children with William, but until I check out St Paul's register from the 1840s, this is unproven. There are several Moores in the St Peter's cemetery which could have been William & Hannah's, as they are buried near Hannah Redmond's grave. Hannah and James were only married five years when Hannah passed away in 1853. They had two children together - Isabella and Richard Lawrence, but I haven't been able to find their marriages or deaths, and they don't appear in the 1901 census.

You can see how closely integrated these three pioneer families are with our relatives the Redmonds, Umlahs and Boutiliers. Given the small population of St Margaret's Bay at the beginning of the nineteenth century, I suppose this isn't surprising. So, having given some of the background of the families marrying the older siblings of my great great

grandfather James Jr. Redmond, I would like to go through the siblings in birth order and what I know about their families and descendants - living descendants would be my third cousins. For now I am skipping David and Catherine whose stories will be told with the Pace Family - this skips most potential cousins, as David was by far the most prolific in producing descendants, and fathered the family that remained in possession of the Umlah-Redmond Seabright land until the 21st century.

James William Redmond is usually described as a farmer, although his land wasn't very productive, and he must have also done a lot of fishing. His eldest son **William Thomas** was definitely a fisherman, as was his son Thomas. William T married his first cousin Margaret Ann Moore in 1861 when he was thirty-five years old, after the following six siblings were already married. They both lived long lives - Margaret Ann was 6 months younger than William, and lived one year and three months longer, to the age of 85. William was buried in the Redmond cemetery. Margaret was buried in St. Peter's, with other Moores in her family (possibly her children from her first marriage), but not with her first husband. My great grandparents James Jr and Elizabeth Redmond (Bishop) were also buried in this cemetery.

Because William T and Margaret Ann married so late in life, they only had time for three children, and the third, little Rebecca, died before she was four, possibly in the TB epidemic there in the 1870s. The second child Jane Elizabeth married Thomas McCray, a hotel keeper of the Allen House Halifax, in 1889 in St Margaret's Bay. His parents were Daniel and Elizabeth - the marriage was by License Anglican by Rev R.H. Brown. They lived in Halifax, apparently without children (although I was unable to find them in the 1901, 1911 censuses), until Thomas died in 1913 from typhoid fever. At that time they were living at 278 Upper Water St in Halifax, in the same block as the Allen House, near the waterfront below the Citadel. There was a typhoid outbreak in Halifax that year, and the City Engineer noted that they had added equipment to put calcium hypochlorite into the water supply, and that the outbreak ended with the cold weather. She was living with her nephew Byron at 88 Edward St in Halifax. In 1921 she lived on 10 Morris St. with another nephew, Donald Redmond, then 18 years old, who had a job caretaking a refinery for \$300/year. Their rent was \$45/mo.

William&Margaret's oldest son Allen Fordham Redmond married Laura

Garrison in 1902. The year before he was living with his 75 year old parents in Hackett's Cove. Allen and Laura had three children before his untimely death from cancer in 1914, only 3-4 years after his parents passed away. Donald (1903-1978) lived a long life, and was buried with his father in St. Peter's. The youngest, Helen (1911-) married a James Sutherland Wilson, but again I don't know anything about their family. But **Byron Allen Redmond** (1908-2003) lived to age 94 in Halifax County. He was married to G Evangelin Fordham, and worked for the Maritime Telegraph & Telephone Co. His obituary gives a summary of his life: "REDMOND, Byron Allan - 94, Glen Margaret, passed away Monday, October 13, 2003, in Parkstone Enhanced Care, Halifax. Born in Glen Margaret, he was a son of the late Allan and Laura (Garrison) Redmond. Byron was a long-time employee of MT&T for 41 years; founding member and past president of Purchasing Managers Association; member of St. Andrew's Masonic Lodge No. 1 AF&AM; a 32' member of A&ASR; a member of St. Peters Anglican Church, Hackett's Cove, and a former president of the Telephone Pioneers of America. Surviving are his son, Allan Fordham (Joan), Shelburne; daughter, Jane Evangeline, Hatchet Lake; granddaughters, Lisa, Sarah and Hannah; six great-grandchildren. He was predeceased by his wife, the former Evangeline G. Fordham; brother, Donald; sister, Helen Wilson. The family will receive visitors 7-9 p.m. Friday in Ronald A. Walker Funeral Home, 13549 Peggy's Cove Rd., Tantallon. Funeral service 11 a.m. Saturday in St. Peter's Anglican Church, Hackett's Cove, Rev. Tom Kerr officiating. Private family burial to follow. In lieu of flowers, donations may be made to the St. Peters Anglican Church Fund, Hackett's Cove or Heart and Stroke Foundation of Nova Scotia. On-line condolences to: www.rawalker.ca"

His son Allen Fordham Redmond was the last Redmond of William Thomas' line. His obituary appeared in the Halifax Herald 7/5/2008

"REDMOND, Allan Fordham - 68, Seabright, passed away at home on Thursday, December 6, 2007. Born in Halifax, he was the son of the late Byron and Evangeline (Fordham) Redmond. Allan was one of the founding members of the Atlantic Sport Car Club, and was an avid sailor and world traveler. He retired from Maritime Tel & Tel. He then pursued his passion for cooking, using his culinary skills at the Cooper's Inn & Restaurant in Shelburne, which he co-owned with his wife, prior to

returning to his home in Seabright in 2005. He was a proud father and grandfather. He is survived by his wife, the former Joan E. Hall; daughters, Lisa (William) Riddle, Sudbury, Ont.; Sarah (Edward) Snowden, Hayesville, N.C.; Hannah (Nicholas) Coombes, Langkawi, Malaysia; grandchildren, Sydney, Piper, Ryelan, Lochlan, Caitlan, Madeline, and stepgrandson, Tyler. A funeral service will be 2 p.m. Tuesday, July 8, in St. Peter's Anglican Church, Hackett's Cove, Rev. Irving Letto officiating. "

So, I wasn't the only member of the family to enjoy working for a telephone company - BC Tel(TELUS) in my case, all the way across Canada.

James' eldest daughter **Anne Isnor (Redmond)** married William Isnor, from the large Isnor family described above. He and Anne had the misfortune of losing one child Silas (1870-71) in infancy, and two more as children Catherine (1866-1877) and Richard (1869-1877), possibly dying in the same TB epidemic that took my great grandparents and one of Grampa Howard's brothers. Times were rough for Nova Scotia fishermen and many were impoverished and susceptible to TB. William himself lasted only two years after losing his children, passing away in 1879, the same year as his 22 year old eldest son James.

Of their three surviving children, two decided to emigrate together to the US, and soon married there. This was very common in the late nineteenth century when there was so much poverty in St Margaret's Bay, and the economy was so much healthier in the US, with Boston drawing many Nova Scotians to its new jobs. Fortunately for Anne, her eldest son Sidney married in St Margaret's Bay, to Fanny Croucher, a descendant of David Redmond's Newfoundland friend James Croucher. They didn't have any children, but looked after Anne in her old age. She lived to be ninety-three years old.

Their daughter **Mary** emigrated to Boston to marry in 1889 Nelson J Kilcup, 25, born to Nova Scotia parents Edward A and Catharine; by clergyman J.A. Shipman of Boston. Their son Edward died in childhood. Their daughter Carrie was thirty-seven and single in the 1930 US Census - Mary lived alone with her, Nelson having passed away, at 1168 Washington in Dorchester, Boston which rented for \$35 per month (expensive in those days). Carrie was a photographer's assistant until

1940 when she stayed home to look after her 80 year old mother - she passed away in 1946 at the age of only 53.

Nelson worked for many years as a "dresser" in the famous Baker Chocolate Mill but passed away in 1926 at the age of 61. By 1930 Nelson's half-brother Watson was living nearby and also working at the chocolate factory. Nelson and Mary lived only a few houses from the chocolate factory, which was the oldest chocolate maker in the US, founded in 1767. Walter Baker was the grandson who made the chocolate world famous. He had a major disagreement over slavery with his nephew Henry Pierce, who supported the anti-slavery movement. Henry still inherited the mill, and built a major expansion just as Nelson arrived in Boston, and there he found his niche. The mill has now been redeveloped into very high end apartments - a beautiful brick building.

Their other surviving daughter **Olive**, who emigrated in 1886 and went to Boston, worked there as a dining attendant. She married Gregory T. Morrill of Taunton, age 33, supervisor, born in Peabody, Mass. to parents Gregory T and Martha B. Trefrey, his second marriage. They were married in Dorchester district, Boston Jul 21 1890 by Pastor Raymond Fletcher Holway of Dorchester. Gregory also worked at the Baker Chocolate mill, and lived nearby. The following year they had one son Wilbur Herbert. In 1930 they were living at 1184 Adams St, Boston, Mass. Wilbur was a successful dentist, living in an expensive home with his wife Maria Grossmann from Virginia (maybe he had a little too much chocolate as a kid?). They retired back to Maria's home town of Petersburg, Virginia, where they lived until 1981 and were buried in Maria's family plot in the Blandford cemetery with her parents. There is no evidence that they had any children.

Gregory Townsend's father of the same name died in the Civil War on July 29, 1864 in Petersburg Virginia, serving under General Sherman at the First Battle of Deep Bottom. This left his wife Martha a widow with six children including Gregory Jr - she did receive a Civil War pension for twenty odd years. Gregory's ancestors can be traced back to Abraham Merrill, who came from England to Boston in 1632.

A third daughter Anna Margaret joined her sisters in Boston in 1896, a single lady age 35. Starting living in as a cleaner at the Boston City Hospital, she progressed to have a very interesting life as a servant in

some of the wealthiest homes in Boston, including 367 Beacon with Harriet Sprague, and later 310 Commonwealth with the Bolles family (a banker and stock broker). These famous houses have their stories told online (Google the address and Boston). After retiring, she lived with her sister Olive and Gregory, near to her widowed sister Mary Kilcup and the famous Baker Chocolate Factory, until her death in 1945. She was buried back with her parents in Hackett's Cove (St. Peter's cemetery). Their gravestones tell the sad story of the five children William & Anne lost in the 1870s, possibly in the tuberculosis epidemic in which my great grandparents James Redmond and Elizabeth Bishop died. The youngest daughter Carrie survived to live with her sister Mary Kilcup in Boston in 1900, and there she worked in a photo shop and lived with her mother Mary in 1920-30.

Mary Redmond was the first of the younger sisters to marry and live in the very small town (then) of Peggy's Cove. It was only started in 1820, and at the time of Mary's marriage to John Thomas Innis in 1858, there were only twenty seven families in Peggy's Cove, among them being Innis, Crooks and D'Aubins. The village was too small to have a church or a school, so the family went to St Peter's Anglican church in Hackett's Cove, and the children went to the French Village school, travelling the short distance by boat. Peggy's Cove is right at the mouth of St Margaret's Bay.

Mary and John had six children from 1858 to 1864, two of which were stillborn; twins Laura J and Ida lived only four years, dying in 1862 and 1863; and two more died in their first year of life - Melissa in 1862 and Olive in 1864. All of the children are buried with their mother in St Peter's cemetery (center section) in Hackett's Cove.

In the 1871 census we find that Mary has taken a couple of children whose fathers died in 1870 - James Redmond (7) and William Collier, 14 (probably a brother of John and child of Robert), from the Catholic branch of the Redmond family. They also had a French maid and a boarder who was a teacher. Perhaps by this time there was a school in Peggy's Cove. She must have been in poor health, as the following year she passed away at the age of 41. From the tragic deaths of all of her children it is highly probable that she had TB, passed it on to all of her children, and died of it in 1872. It must have been a great sadness to the couple, who so much wanted children that they were trying to raise two

orphans just before her death.

The D'Aubins and Crooks families are large extended families in Peggy's Cove. Richard D'Aubin (sometimes spelled Daubin or De Aubin) married **Margaret Catherine Redmond** in 1855 at St. Peter's church. They lived in Peggy's Cove, and had four boys and two girls. Half of the children went to the US, and half stayed in the neighbourhood. The oldest boy Edward Campbell was the first to emigrate to the US, in Taunton, Massachusetts, which is a rural area near to Rhode Island. He married Jessie Munroe (from Nova Scotia as well) in 1885, and they had two children, though their first son died within a month. Their son Arthur was 16 and living with his parents in Taunton in 1910.

The most interesting D'Aubin American was Laura, who followed her brother Edward C to Taunton, and married Daniel Lehan in 1892. They had three children Ralph, Emma and Edward. Daniel was a hotel proprietor, owner of the Wampanoag Inn in a rural area just north of Taunton - named after the local Indian band. The Wampanoag were the tribe that negotiated the first treaty with the Pilgrims. He ran this Inn for over twenty years, as it became one of the first motels in the US.

It was a family business - in 1930 Daniel's wife Laura was the housekeeper, son Ralph was the clerk, and daughter Emma was the hostess. Emma was divorced from her husband George Talbot - their only child died young. Ralph was also married, but his new bride Mildred Desmond was living with her widowed mother Elizabeth in Brockton, Mass. After Daniel & Laura passed away, Ralph, now a stock broker, moved in with his mother-in-law and he and Mildred had four children. Just recently the Wampanoag band was granted an exclusive casino license for the SW part of Massachusetts, near to Rhode Island, and plan to build a giant casino with three hotels and upscale retail stores. It will probably be near the site of the Lehan's Inn in the 1930s. Ralph's brother Edward (1899-1975) was a sports writer in Portland Maine in 1940. All of the family is honored in the St Joseph's Cemetery in Taunton (Find A Grave).

The other daughter Frances was alive in the 1881 census, but I have been unable to find anything else about her - she could have died or married before 1891, or moved out of the country.

James Richard D'Aubin, the second son, married Eulalia Corkum, and moved across the mouth of St. Margaret's Bay to Chester Basin, where the Corkum family lived. He was a carpenter, a section man on the railway, and a farmer, but suffered from some mental illness, as he died from "exhaustion from mania". They had seven children, four of whom were buried in the cemetery for St. John's church in Chester Basin having lived in Chester Basin their whole life: Lena May (1900-1993); Vera Gertrude Skelly (D'Aubin) 1902-1985 (her husband Edward was a farmer); Marguerite Viola (1903-2001) and Edward (Edwin?) A. (1910-1980) .

The eldest daughter *Francis* (1895-1931) married Thomas *Hiltz*, a carpenter, and they had at least one son Reginald and one grandson Daryl. The eldest son Avery (1898-1982) married Ruth Burns in 1925 - he was a salesman. The second son Harold Robert (1908-1966) married Madeleine Mack and had at least one son Barry.

Robert Wesley D'aubin was a sailor who left home for the US, and had a difficult life during the Depression, ending up as a transient farm worker in Sacramento, California in 1930. His application for Social Security in 1937 included the exact full names of his parents, and his birth date in "Percy's Point", Nova Scotia. This was somewhat surprising, as Find A Grave has found that he was buried in Sacramento County Cemetery in 1936! Fran's intriguing theory is that he may have done one of his transient friends a favour when he knew he was dying. Social Security had just started in 1935, in an attempt to identify citizens so they would get preference in hiring over illegal immigrants. The SS Number was never used to collect any benefits, but would have been invaluable in helping his friend to find a job.

William D'Aubin (1870-1944), the youngest son, married Edna Rafuse in 1892, and moved next to the Rafuse family in Upper Dyke Village, near Kentville NS. Their youngest son Edward Carleton was a clerk when he married Erna Webber in 1921, and a traffic manager when he married Catherine Henrion in 1938 - he lived in Halifax. Older son Murray (1892-1958) married Belle Gould in Amherst NS - they lived in Kentville where he made a living as a stone mason. Unfortunately he was a chronic alcoholic, which led to his death from exposure in 1958. Halifax winters aren't to be trifled with!

The third Redmond daughter to move to Peggy's Cove is **Caroline Redmond**, who married John **Crooks** from one of the original families settling there, on 14 Jan 1862 at St. Peter's in Hackett's Cove. They had seven or eight children (couldn't confirm existence of Oliver), and they stayed close to Peggy's Cove. John was a fisherman who lived there his whole life, while doing some carpentry around the time his daughters married. Most of the family are buried together in the entrance (left) side of St. Peter's cemetery. John lived to be 84, but Caroline passed away in 1890 at the age of 54.

Their infant daughter, the first *Cassy*, lived only 2 yrs and 16 days up to Dec 17 1870, and is buried with her parents, and near their three single children Lawrence (1863-1888); Lottie (1875-1958) and David Reuben (1877-1961). Their eldest daughter *Esther Crooks* married widower David *Duggan* of East Dover, and they had seven children there, only a few miles north of Peggy's Cove. David brought his five children from his previous marriage to Mary Ann Redmond, a grand-daughter of James W's older brother David. In the 1901 census only one of Caroline's step-children (Clarence) is still living with them. They are also boarding the local school teacher Hattie McDonald.

David lived to be 84 years old, living the whole time in the tiny town of East Dover as a fisherman - and Esther (1866-1936) died nearly two years to the day after her husband. Most of their children stayed in East Dover. They had at least the seven grandchildren of Pearl Conrod (Duggan) & Percy - one of them died with her husband in a traffic accident in Toronto in 1994.

Olive Crooks was married twice in 1886 and 1892, having one daughter Lillia with Ernest Roberts before he passed away, and two in Halifax with her second husband Albert Norton. Ernest was a railway supervisor, born in England, and Albert was a train conductor. He died from gangrene and stomach ailments, so probably had diabetes.

Carrie Crooks married an American Robert Kennedy - they were married in 1892 in New Rochelle, New York, and had three children there, but one was stillborn, and John Reuben lived only one month. Only Olive lived to get married, and was in New Rochelle with her parents at the time of the 1900 census. The family apparently moved back to Peggy's Cove to have baby Lottie Stella in January 1901, but she only lived 2 yrs

9 months. In the 1901 census, Carrie and the children are with her father, and Robert is nearby with Carrie's sister Olive Norton in Peggy's Cove. They are together with the Crooks family in St. Peter's cemetery, and with their sister Olive Williams (1896-1983). Cassie died in 1906, only 34 years old. Robert may have died later in 1901, as there is a death registration in New York with the right name and age, but his name is so common, we aren't sure. In any case, he wasn't found in the subsequent censuses.

This concludes our tale of the siblings of my great grandfather James Redmond Jr. except for the two children who married into the fascinating Pace family.

THE PACE FAMILY HISTORY AND REDMOND THIRD COUSINS

Two of the Redmond children married into the illustrious Pace family - Emily Pace marrying David Redmond in 1856, and William Taylor Pace marrying Catherine Redmond in 1858. Their father Ebenezer, who married Elizabeth Isnor, was the eighth generation of the Pace family in North America.

The first Pace in North America was Richard Pace, who arrived in Jamestown, Virginia, with his wife Isabell Smyth, shortly after being married on Oct 5, 1608 in St. Dunstan, Stepney, London, England. (Isabell Smyth was born in 1589 in London, Middlesex. England and died after 1637 in Jamestown, James City, Virginia.) Their life in Virginia has made them famous, and a book has been written about their family ("Turner, F. R., and E. P. Terrell, *The Pace Family, 1607-1750* (1993. WH Wolfe Associates, Roswell, Georgia)" Their adventure in Virginia is wonderfully captured in rhyme by a twelfth generation descendant:

"Listen my children, come face to face with your brave, great, grandfather Richard Pace.

He lived in England four centuries past. He finished Cambridge the best in his class. His Grandpapa John finished Cambridge and Eton too, like Father John he did best what he had to do. One was High Jester for King Henry the Eighth who had to be careful about what he ate. His father was Secretary for Queen Elizabeth the First. You see, your ancestors had

noble birth. When Richard learned the Admiral** of the ocean sea discovered America for you and me, he asked the Queen for a farm on Virginia's shore. She granted his wish and a little bit more: Two hundred acres on the Jamestown River where savages fought with bow and quivver. She asked him to take his wife Isabella Smythe and little son George to build a new life. She needed a brave soldier for wilderness works to protect her colony in Virginia's Woods. Pace cut down the forests and planted corn; he began his work each early morn. He caught fish in the river from a dugout canoe; he finished the work he had to do. He built a big home on Mt. Pleasant Bluff; he saved his earnings till he had enough to return his son to an English school, a court education was his father's goal.

When the Marmaduke sailed with little George, loneliness began on Pace's Paines Gorge. To fill the gap the Paces found an Indian lad, Chanco by name who had lost his dad. Chanco was taught to read and write, to plant the crops and care for the stock. A grateful foster son this Indian Chanco, he taught Colonel Pace to plant tobacco. The money rolled in from this smoking weed It paid plantation debts with joyful speed. The Jamestown colonials could see the stars when Europe smoked more Raleigh cigars. Prosperity in Virginia replaced 'starvin' time'. Uprising Indians began to combine to plot, to destroy these pale face invaders, swapping land for a toy. Upon the death of friendly Chief Powhatan, his brother the treacherous Chief Opechan ordered the Indian braves to destroy every man, his squaw and every child in his colony clan. Chanco's job was the Chief's command: The murder of Father Pace on the ides of March, Then destroy his men and lift the torch. Tears and fears filled Chanco's soul His prayers to God begged another role. To save, not kill; to return love, not hate, brace little Chanco opened the gate. In the midnight of March, he awakened Pace with warning plea "make haste from your bed" "The death threats to the Governor you must spread." Pace secured his home, then with fearless face, he sprang down the bluff to begin his race. He paddled with skill his dugout canoe. He did the thing he had to do.

He crossed three miles of the Jamestown streams; he rowed like the champion of his college team. By three o'clock past midnight he reached the governor, with Chanco's message of fearful proportions. First alerting the guards then house by house, Pace recounted the sorrows

before the massacre. He foretold the horror of the mass death-macabre. A thousand souls in defensive retribution must arm and destroy or face total destruction. You know the rest in the books you have read, how the Indian raiders burned and fled; how the Colonials in Jamestown defended their homes, preserved their city by the strength of their bones. When forewarned and forearmed through the message of Pace, through Chanco came the respite of Amazing Grace. But on Surrey's Shores, they reached their mark; more than three hundred scalps were removed in the dark. * * * * * Now in sixteen hours since Pace was shaken By Chanco's cries himself to awaken, he had twice crossed six miles of water in frosty mists like Virginia's October. He had alarmed the guards, conferred with the Governor, galloped his horse 20 miles up the river; distributed pistols, fireballs and powder; repeated the warning to every farmer; recrossed the river to Surrey's Shores. Now with only one thought in his aching dome, He was on the run to his plantation home. He turned the fork of the familiar lane; he was saddened by the smoke of the smouldering grain. The pastures were empty of sheep and cattle, every sign his friends had lost their battle. One old bull which was dead all over, carried three red feathered arrows behind his left shoulder.

One dead Indian with tomahawk in hand who lay lifeless and dead on Virginia's sand had three blond scalps and a frying pan. Pace quickly ran into Pastor Maycock's cabin, on the bedroom floor in bloody mutilation were the corpses of Reverend Sam and his Wife. Alas! no other sign of surviving life. A tear rolled down his cheek when he discovered Baby Sarah's cradle was empty without cover. Pace fearfully circled the house and farm; he searched the well, the garden, the barn. A frightened mother cat on a pile of limbs disappeared within to frighten him. Her cries directed him to remove the limbs covering an open grave - on a quilt of silk lay a four month baby clutching a bottle of milk. Little Sarah was saved as he lifted her up - her crackers, her milk and her silver cup. Mother Pace would finish the job farsightedly begun by the Maycocks and God.

As he warmed little Sarah inside his coat, how could he know she would marry son George? She at 15 and George 21, became parents of his Richard grandson. As ancestors of Richards II through IV, now Drury then William, Dreadzile and Lucrecia's five generations; Richard Pace's 5000 descendants helped build a new nation. As a target of the wrath of

Indian revenge, when the colonials in battle, while their homes did singe, Richard Pace had a fatal arrow delivered into him. America's Grandfather dead at thirty-two, had completed the job he had to do. Forbourn on the night wind of the past through all out history to the last, people will waken and hear that splash by swiftly moving oars in this nautical dash, to carry Chanco's warning Pace brought with him. It saved the Jamestown colony when hopes were dim. England and America shall honor them.

* Author is 12th generation descendant of Richard Pace I, whose great x 5 grandfather John's brother Richard translated the Book of Psalms for the King James Version of the Bible. The poem's completion celebrates his 72nd birthday on April 13, 1985." Others in the Pace family were prominent in the court of Henry VIII, and were distinguished gentry, often educated at Oxford and Cambridge. "

The London company that was financing the Jamestown colonization was very worried when news of the Indian massacre reached London, as it could have a very negative effect on its sales of passages to America. So they seized on the heroic story of Chanco, who they portrayed as an Indian boy who had been converted to Christianity by the missionaries, and was so motivated to warn his masters of the impending attack. Funny thing, though - there was no mention of the massacre of the missionary Pastor Maycock.

Richard and Isabel's only son George Pace became quite a large landowner, inheriting his father's plantation known as Pace's Paines in Charles Co, Virginia, just north of Jamestown. They also received the land of the unfortunate family of Pastor Maycock through his wife Sarah, the only surviving daughter - George's mother claimed the Maycock land for Sarah after Richard's death. George & Sarah had seven children - their eldest was to become the second in a long line of Richard Paces. George later sold the Maycock's 1700 acres. Pastor Maycock and his wife were sent by the Virginia Governor to head one of the three "hundred" churches in Jamestown, each built to serve one hundred families.

Although the original Richard Pace in America had only one child, George and his descendants were very fertile, often having over a dozen children, so today there is an enormous community of Pace descendants. There is a Pace Society of America (www.pacesociety.org), which

contains a large section linking the many Pace descendants who have had their DNA tested. There are also numerous books that have been written about the Paces, including Turner, F. R., and E. P. Terrell, *The Pace Family, 1607-1750* (1993. WH Wolfe Associates, Roswell, Georgia). I have taken the Pace genealogy - our section of the tree - from Rootsweb's World Family Tree, as there are many trees on the Pace family there, and you can find more about any of the Pace families by searching WFT by husband's and wife's (maiden) names.

Richard Pace II (1638-1677) married Sarah Knowles and had eight children, staying their whole life at the Pace's Paines plantation. Richard Pace III was their second child and eldest son. Richard Pace III married Rebecca Poythress. They had seventeen children - Richard Pace IV was the sixth and eldest son. Right after his birth the family moved to Bertie Precinct, North Carolina, which is near the Roanoke River. His sister Rebecca married an Aycock, and that line leads to the Genealogy.com large family tree of the American branches.

Richard Pace IV (1700-1775) went back to Jamestown to marry Elizabeth Cain, and they had fourteen children from 1724 to 1746, some in Bertie Precinct, and most, including James Pace, born in Jamestown. He picked the right time to die in 1775 - in Richmond county Georgia, which is just across the Savannah River from South Carolina. Back then it was wilderness - today it is the town of Augusta, and his land may have become the famous Augusta golf course of Masters fame. By this time James owned a pub just across the river in South Carolina - I'm not sure whether James had acquired the farm land in Georgia, or if it belonged to his father Richard and James inherited it upon his death. The American Revolution started the following year - Richard wouldn't have wanted to see his sons fighting each other on opposite sides. In any case, James had become a man of wealth and influence.

When war broke out in 1776, James supported the British cause. Along with John Hall, James was charged by the Georgia Council of Safety and his arrest ordered. His activities and fate are described in the warrant for his arrest:

"Extracted from Proceedings of the Georgia Council of Safety

At a meeting of the Council of Safety, Friday, January 12th, 1776

PRESENT: George Walton Edward Telfair Ambrose Wright Samuel Elbert
Joseph Habersham Archibald Bulloch Stephen Drayton John Martin
William Ewen William Gibbons

Capt. James Goldwire and Lieutenant Richard Scruggs attended the Board and represented that they had received orders of the President, commanding Capt. Goldwire to make a draught of one third of the company and to march them down to Savannah; that in consequence of these orders, they draughted one third of the company and assembled them and ordered them forthwith to march to Savannah, and that not only every man draughted, but every man in the whole company, except William King, absolutely refused obeying the said orders, whereby they could not comply with them.

They also represented that they had often heard James Pace, tavern keeper, and John Hall, planter, declare that they were King's men, and that all the men in the Congress and Council of Safety were Rebels; and that they would oppose all their measures and that they were welcome to try it when they pleased. They further observed that James Pace and John Hall excited the men of the said company to disobedience by their means and prevented some of them from coming to town and that they were of opinion that unless some immediate steps are taken they will certainly do great harm to the public, and they also considered themselves in personal danger from the said James Pace and John Hall, if they were suffered to go at large; therefore,

RESOLVED, That James Pace, of the Parish of Saint Matthew, tavern keeper, and John Hall of the same place, are inimical to the liberties of America; and that public safety is endangered by their going at large.

RESOLVED, THEREFORE, That Colonel Drayton be appointed to command the militia of the Parishes of Saint Matthew, Saint George and Saint Paul; and that as soon as he can assemble a sufficient force, he shall arrest and take the said James Pace and John Hall and bring them to Savannah; and that he shall suppress and disperse by force all and every person who shall appear in arms in opposition to the measures of

Congress, or who shall declare against the Liberties of America.

RESOLVED, That Edwd. Telfair, Esquire, be appointed to go with and to aid and assist Colonel Drayton in the measures necessary to be pursued in order to the execution of the foregoing resolutions.

RESOLVED, That the officers and men in the Parishes aforesaid are bound to pay obedience to the orders which may be issued by Colonel Drayton, and that neglect or disobedience shall be punished agreeable to the Regulations of Congress.

RESOLVED, That the militia shall be paid at the rates that were allowed to the militia called out to suppress the insurgents in South Carolina, and that they draw rations in the same manner while employed in this service."

Against one third of the American forces in South Carolina, James and John and their recruits were unsuccessful. In the ensuing battle James was badly wounded, along with his son Willis, and they were fortunate to escape to East Florida to join James' youngest brother Darius, who had previously escaped to St Augustine. It is said that James lost four of his sons in the war.

However, all of his possessions were seized by the Patriots, including the tavern and the property described in the "Valuation and appraisement of the real and personal estate of James Pace, late of the Province of Georgia, Tavern Keeper, taken and carried off by the Rebels and Confiscated.

PROPERTY CONFISCATED

410 Acres of land situate in St. Matthew's Parish on Savannah River with a Crop of Corn, and sundry improvements, valued at 20/...per Acre...

Two good Dwelling Houses and Outbuildings valued and included in the above charge.....

A Tract of Land containing 500 Acres (not improved) situate on Briar Creek, St. George's Parish in the province aforesaid, valued at 7/...per Acre

Taken and carried off by the Rebels

7 Negroes viz 3 men, 3 women & 1 child ;150 Head of Cattle 15 Horses 40 Hogs; 250 Sides of Tann'd Leather 50 Raw Cow Hides 2 Currying Knives; 2 Sets of Tools 7 Beds & Furniture 3 Mattrasses & Furn.

9 Bedsteads 6 Tables 2 Dozen Chairs; 1 Riding Chair 2 Carts 5 Saddles; 2 Large Trunks 1 Pr. Fire Dogs

1 Box tools, 2 Pair Hulyards 2 Pair Money Scales 2 Sets Iron Wedges; 7 Potts 2 Frying Pans 1 Grind Stone 7 Axes 10 Broad Hoes 1 Mattuck Handsaws 1 Cross Cut Saw Spoonsalese Glasses 6 Tumblers 1 Doz Cups & Saucers 3 1 Gal.Stone Btls.th 150 Head of Poultry 6 Bowles 1 Lg Looking Glass; 500 Bushels of Corn 150 Bushels of Rice 200 Bushels of Potatoes ;5 Pair Cotton Cards 4 Spinning Wheels"

So, James went from being a wealthy man, land-owner, slave owner and prosperous tavern keeper to losing everything and having to flee to Florida for his life. His brothers did not all share his sympathies - we shall soon hear the story of his second youngest brother Capt. Drury Pace. Fortunately his youngest brother Darius also held British sympathies, and had escaped earlier to East Florida. Most of the rest of his brothers survived the war - Thomas, Silas (also a British sympathizer), and Barnabas survived the war; - Charles, Richard and Dreadzil (who had married a Cherokee Indian) did not. To understand what was going on in Florida at the time, I refer to the Wiki on Florida American Revolution

"Although most Americans know something of the American Revolution and of the thirteen colonies that rebelled against Great Britain, fewer know that Florida actually played a major role in the great war for independence.

England actually held sixteen American colonies at the beginning of the Revolution. In addition to the thirteen that rebelled against King George III, these included Canada and East and West Florida. Canada, of course, was originally French and the Floridas originally Spanish, but Great Britain gained control of them following the end of the French and Indian War. Already over 200 years old, St. Augustine was the capital of East Florida and an important military post for the British. Pensacola, at

the opposite end of the modern state, was the capital of West Florida.

When the thirteen colonies rebelled in 1775, East and West Florida remained loyal to the King. As a result, St. Augustine became a hub of Loyalist activity. British troops garrisoned both the Castillo de San Marcos (which they called Fort Saint Mark) and Fort Matanzas and the city served as a launching point for several expeditions against Georgia. American forces also launched several campaigns against St. Augustine, but none succeeded. There were, however, a number of battles and skirmishes in the northeast corner of Florida and southeast corner of Georgia as the two armies battled for control of the area between St. Augustine and Savannah.

Because it remained in British hands throughout the war, the city became an important destination for Loyalist refugees from throughout the thirteen rebelling colonies. The population of St. Augustine swelled and numerous new homes and other structures were constructed and many older Spanish buildings renovated. St. Augustine was also noted as a prison location during the war. Several signers of the Declaration of Independence fell into British hands during the war and were brought to St. Augustine as prisoners of war. When the American Revolution ended in favor of the thirteen states in 1783, Great Britain also lost control of Florida. Spain had sided with the fledgling United States and regained possession of its Florida colonies at the end of the war."

James Pace was an interesting man. In 1745 he went to France, and married a French woman Aurelia Dupree. They had their first son Samuel in France before returning to the US to make their fortune in Georgia/South Carolina. Sadly, upon reaching sanctuary in Florida, he was not to survive his war wounds, and died in St Augustine in 1783. With the assistance of James' brother Darius, Aurelia and her two young children Drury and Thomas and her wounded son Willis escaped to New Brunswick by British ship before Florida was turned over to the Spanish, who sympathized with the new colonies. It is possible the escapees spent some time in Britain, as Darius met and married his bride Dorothy Raines in Wales before arriving in Nova Scotia where they made their family.

While in Florida, the wounded son Willis Pace applied for restitution for

his confiscated property, but was refused on the basis of the application being too late to meet the British deadline. The legal documents filed have been saved in the Public Archive of Nova Scotia, as follows:

"ORIGINAL ON FILE PANS (AO13/26/338-342)

East Florida

Before me John Mills, one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace for George District:

Personally appeared Mr. Willis Pace, late of the Province of Georgia, but now a Refugee in the Province of East Florida, aforesaid, who being duly sworn, made oath on the Holy Evangelists of Almighty God, That all and singular the Real and Personal Estate and Effects set forth and valued in the two preceeding pages of this sheet of Paper were and are the just Right and Property of James Pace, late of the Province of Georgia, aforesaid Tavern Keeper, Deceased. That the said property was not disposed of by the said Deceased or any other person by his authority, but that the said property was taken by the Rebels as mentioned in the foregoing Valuation and appraisement. And that he, this Deponent is the Eldest Son and one of the Heirs of the said James Pace, Deceased

Willis Pace (sgd) Sworn at St. Augustine the 22.d Bivenber 1783

Before me, John Mills, one of his Majesty's Justices of the Peace for George District

Personally appeared John Thomas, John Fox and William Johnston, Refugees from Georgia, who being duly sworn, made oath, on the Holy Evangelists of Almighty God, that agreeable to the Testimony laid before them by Willis Pace, the Eldest son of James Pace, late of the Province of Georgia, Tavern Keeper, Deceased, they (these Deponent's) have maturely considered the same, and do declare that the Estate and Effects therein mentioned were (before the late Rebellion in North America) well worth the Sums annexed thereto Amounting to the Sum of One Thousand Six Hundred and Eighty seven Pounds Two Shillings and Two Pence Sterling, according to the best of their skill and Knowledge.

John Thomas, John Fox, William Johnson

Sworn at St. Augustine, The 22d November 1783 before me.

John Mill J. P

DARIUS PACE late of Georgia but now of Rawdon

Maketh Oath and saith, That he resided in East Florida from the 15th of July, 1783, to the 25th of March 1784; and this Deponent further saith, That he was utterly incapable of presenting or delivering to the Commissioners appointed by Act of Parliament, passed in the 23rd Year of the Reign of this present Majesty, entitled "An Act for appointing Commissioners, to enquire into the losses and Services of all such Persons who have suffered in their Rights. Properties, and Possessions, during the late unhappy Dissentions in America, in Consequence of their Loyalty to his Majesty, and Attachment to the British Government", or at their Office any Memorial, Claim, or Request, for Aid or Relief, on Account of this Deponent's Losses during the late unhappy Dissentions in America, within the Time allowed by the said Act, for receiving such Claims; by Reason that this Deponent, during all such Time, viz. between the 15th of July 1783 and the 25th of July, 1784, lived or resided in East Florida as aforesaid And this Deponent further saith that his deceased brother James Pace (as beforesaid of whom he claims) had his Account made out in November 1783 and his Intention at that time was, as he informed this Deponent, to have carried the same to England in Person, but he was afterwards prevented by Sickness, and not having any person whom he could trust, he did not think proper to send it to England

Darius Pace (sgd)

Sworn before me the Com's of American Claims at Halifax 13th January 1786

Despite Darius' efforts, the claim was denied, but when Aurelia's son Drury turned 16, he joined with his mother to petition for land when he was 16, and they were granted, jointly, 200 acres near North Beaver

Brook, near Truro. In 1815 he was granted his own 640 acres at Chezzetcook near Petpeswick Lake. On 27 April 1796, the wedding banns to Mehetable (Race?) were published. By 1810 he was living and farming in Chezzetcook. (St. George Church records). In 1828 he sold most of his property to James Beswanger. From these deeds it is learned that both he and his wife could not write. This was an unexpected consequence of the American Revolution - the War happened during his school age years when apparently he had no access to schooling. This was unusual in the Pace family, as James, Darius and all the ancestral Richard Paces received the best of education, often going back to England for their privileged education. Drury and Mehetable had four children, according to the Rootsweb World Family Tree, "txgentracker" tree (John Martin Knight).

Darius was granted land in Rawdon, South of Truro, in the middle of nowhere, which is where the Pace family first landed. He and his Welsh wife Dorothy had eight children. His eldest, Darius Jr, raised a family in Upper Musquodoboit, north of Halifax, and his youngest son, born in Bedford, near Halifax in 1802, had a family in Ecum Secum, Guysborough County. Darius himself died in South Carolina, possibly visiting his elder brothers who had survived the war.

James' youngest son Thomas, who was born in Savannah River Isle, South Carolina, was an infant when the American Revolution started. He married Mary Smith on Jan 27, 1803 in St. Paul's Church, Halifax, and had five children. The family tree of "txgentracker" in Rootsweb's World Family Tree shows six generations of Thomas' descendants, including many living now - contact John Martin Knight at hiddenhider@cox.net for details. The Pace family that married the Redmonds are children from Thomas' second son Ebenezer. So David and Catherine Redmond, who married Ebenezer's eldest daughter Emily Isabella and son William Taylor, are related to this famous Pace family through their father-in-law, and are distant cousins to US President Dwight D Eisenhower through their mother-in-law Mary Isnor.

Ebenezer (1809-1890) was the son of Thomas and Mary. He was a shoemaker and lived at Haggets (now Hacketts) Cove. A Methodist, he led the singing in the William Black Memorial Church in Glen Margaret when it was first erected. He married Elizabeth Isnor in 1831, and is recorded in the Methodist Brunswick Street records. They were buried

in the Glen Margaret cemetery. They had eight children, including Robert Thomas Pace. He was a policeman in the city of Halifax. A big man, Robert was known as "Tool Box Bobbie" from his habit of locking persons he arrested in large tool boxes found on the streets, and then collecting them at the end of his beat.

Before following the fate of the Pace family in Canada through the Redmond families, let us return to the American Revolution, and contrast the trials of James Pace's family with that of his brother Captain Drury Pace, who is a venerated hero of the American Revolution. Here is the story of Drury and his father, told by his son Barnabas:

"Family History of the Paces," from 1844 to 1850, written by Barnabas Pace, son of Drury Pace. Barnabas Pace, the writer, was born 1789.

My dear Son:

I have for several years intended to write you a history of the Pace Family so far as I have been personally acquainted with or had it handed down to me traditionally by older branches of the family. And I wish you to keep up the history, and at your death turn it over to any one of your descendants, if any, or to a descendant of mine, so he bears the name of Pace. I wish you to enjoin on him to keep the same up to his time and turn it over in the same way with the same directions. Also to let the box that accompanies this history, the old book, and my letters, be they many or few, be kept [together] and on no account let them be separated.....

My grandfather, Richard Pace, IV....was born in the year 1700 in Virginia on the patrimonial estate of his father and grandfather, and was the oldest son. In his 23rd year he married Elizabeth Cain, who was also of English Parents. My grandfather raised nine sons and four daughters.... Sixth son was Drury, of whom I shall not now speak, intending to devote a chapter to him before I close.... I now shall take up again the history of my grandfather, Richard Pace IV. I have told you that he was born in 1700 and that he married Elizabeth Cain, in about the year 1723, where he lived on his father's land on the Roanoke until his youngest child was some seven or eight years old, the lands considerably worn, and hard to get; he mustered all his sons and daughters, and sons-in-law and daughters-in-law and moved out and settled within thirteen

miles of Augusta, in a N. E. direction (not Augusta then but now) for the whole country was a wilderness at that time, which was 1758 or thereabouts. Bringing with him some four hundred head of cattle, and a fine stock of horses, and everything necessary to make a settlement in the wilder-ness... Here he lived a few years and the old Cherokee war breaking out in 1761, the family moved to N. Carolina in the same country Uncle Cox remained in, obtained lands and cleared a farm, lived and died, him and grandmother, just before the war. Their remains lie within about 100 yards of the river awaiting the sound of Gabriel's trumpet....

My son, I have seen the handwriting of my grandfather; he wrote an elegant hand, spelt well and was a man of good english education. I have often heard him spoken of by old men who knew him as a man of good, sound sense, a plain, unassuming man, a good citizen, a good neighbor a kind husband, and as a parent skilled in managing a family and training his children in the pathway of virtue, honesty and righteousness.

I shall now take up the history of my father, Drury Pace. He was born in October, 1745, received a good english education, was six feet, two and one-half inches high, straight built as an Indian, weighing about 180 pounds, strong bodily powers, lean faced, thin Roman nose, complexion a little swarthy, coal black, straight hair, very thin on his head, eyes dark hazel, rather small, quick in their in their movements, and when excited in any way he would throw open his eyes in a rather glaring manner, and if angry he would snap his eyes very fast. In common conversation his voice was soft, words quick and mild, -- open, pleasing countenance, well calculated to make friends wherever his lot might be cast.... In the year 1768 he married Mary Bussey, the daughter of Charles Bussey, who moved from the eastern shore of Maryland and settled on the Savannah River eight miles above Augusta, on the Carolina side, (who was also of English stock). Father, so far as I have been able to learn, located himself 17 miles above the river, on the lands of his father, where he employed himself in that best of all employments, farming and keeping and raising a large stock of cattle, horses, and hogs. Plenty rewarded his labors.....The dark clouds of war began to hang heavy over his beloved country. He long had enjoyed freedom in the true sense of the word, and did not hesitate a moment to inquire what he should do, but took up his gun, leaving mother and the

three children in the hands of his God, united himself with the armies of his country, whigs as then called, in the defense of the rights of man.

Almost all of his neighbors, and two of his brothers were tories, and he soon found there was no place of safety for him but in the tented field. Early in the war he was appointed Captain by Governor Rutledge of South Carolina. His neighbors sought his life. Tory officers hunted after him, plans were laid to entrap him, many a hard fought battle was he in, many hair breadth escapes did he pass through, but God, as he often said, brought him safely through them all, never suffered the enemy's ball to touch him only twice, , once passing through his hat on his head, at another time cutting him slightly on his shoulder.....It is needless to run over his battles and sufferings. Suffice it to say he suffered hunger, cold, ruined a fine constitution, wasted much of his time and property in defense of his country's rights."

One Remembrance day weekend Ancestry.com offered a free weekend accessing their database on DAR (Daughters of the American Revolution). It is considered quite an honour to receive a membership in Sons of the the American Revolution or DAR - to qualify you must prove your entire family line linking you to someone who served in the American Revolution. I have saved all six of the applications that successfully linked themselves to Capt. Drury Pace: Willie Lee Getzen, World War II veteran living in Florida; his brothers James Culbreath Getzen of Florida and Thompson Hart Getzen; Thomas Pace Barker of DeLeon, Texas; of Florida, Robert Luther Getzen of Jacksonville, Florida, cousin of Willie Lee, and also a World War II veteran; John Luther Briggs, also a cousin of Willie Lee, a World War II veteran and living in Jacksonville, Florida; Thomas Luther Carraway of Mississippi, who is related to one of James and Drury's sisters Amy whose husband Solomon Strickland served in the Revolution; Lee Bowen Spencer of Oklahoma, also descended from Solomon Strickland; and Austin Beverley Smith of Mississippi, descended from Solomon Strickland. They all qualified for membership.

Now for our Redmond Paces - they have to rise from the ashes of their great grandfather's choice in the American Revolution, but they have some of the Pace intelligence in their genes. William Taylor Pace was a fisherman who chose to make a living as a trader - in fish and meat among other things. William's father Ebenezer was a shoemaker, and led

the singing in the William Black Methodist church in Glen Margaret when it was first built in 1821. The Pace family was very active in this church, and many in the family are buried in the old cemetery surrounding the church, including William and Catherine Redmond, his father Ebenezer, and his children.

William married **Catherine Redmond** in 1858 in this church, and they had three children. *Anna Pace* (1861-1916) married twice, but was buried beside William and Catherine in the William Black old cemetery. Her first husband James Stannage Boutilier was a second cousin once removed of her mother Mary Catherine - not everyone can claim that their husband and their mother are second cousins! She had four children - Eva lived as a domestic in Halifax in 1901, when she was 18. Her brother William lived with his grandparents William & Catherine in Glen Margaret, near to his Uncle Lawson's family. I am not sure what happened to this family, but it seems likely that they moved to the US, as Anna's second husband William Thompson was an American. There is no sign of the family in Canada in 1911.

Lenora married John Newton Coombs and had four children in Glen Margaret, living near to Byron Redmond in the 1911 census for Hackett's Cove P.18: Lily, Evelyn, Eugene & Clarissa. After he died in 1922 of stomach cancer she married John Taylor O'Brien and moved to Windsor, NS. Evelyn married James Baker, a cook, in Hackett's Cove in 1922. There is no sign of the rest of the family in Canada in 1911.

Joseph Lawson Pace (1863-1937) was a butcher all his life, and carried on his father's profession as a trader in cattle and meat. He married Julia Harnish, a descendant of the Lunenburg Protestants, daughter of William & Catherine Harnish of West Dover, NS. According to members of the Coolen family researched by Noella Fisher, Julia was a very kind and generous extrovert, a tiny woman, and was a welcoming hostess. They had a large family of nine children. Sadly Julia died of cancer in 1933 at the age of 67, and Lawson died of a stroke four years later. They were buried with some of their family in the William Black cemetery in Glen Margaret.

Robert Watson Pace was a steam fitter in Glen Margaret. He married Rosina Boutilier in 1891 in Glen Margaret and had three children there, had two children die in infancy, and then moved to Sydney NS for work,

and had a fourth child there. After Rosina died of a heart attack in 1916, he moved back to Glen Margaret, married Mary Collid, and after losing one child in infancy, they had Cyril (1921-1993), who moved out to the west coast - passing away on the Sunshine coast in Garden Bay BC. His three children all chose to make their life in Sydney - and all died young - Guy dying from heart problems during a fishing trip; Roy from a heart attack in Sydney at age 59, and Percy at age 60 in Sandborn, New Hampshire.

The two Pace brothers Joseph Lawson and Robert Watson both died on the same day! According to Eric B. Pace, Cyril C. Pace, and Eldon R. Pace this is the way it happened. "I was told this story about the death of Joseph Lawson Pace and his brother, Robert Watson Pace by the sons of each man.

Joseph Lawson Pace (Lawson) was a big man -- well over 6 feet. He was a butcher and very strong. His brother, Robert, was also a very strong man, but not as tall by any means as his brother.

During the afternoon of March 2, 1937, Lawson Pace suffered a stroke while he was at work butchering. His brother, Robert, picked up Lawson and carried this heavy man to his home in Glen Margaret, and in so doing, he put serious strain on his heart. In the small hours of the morning, Robert suffered a heart attack and died, and shortly after that Lawson died as well. I have spoken to friends of the family who still remember the funeral with the two caskets at the altar of William Black Memorial Church in Glen Margaret. Both brothers died March 3, 1937."

Robert Watson Pace had six children. Percy Pace (1896-1956) was a teacher, and at the age of 26 he emigrated to the US with his wife Ruby to take up a position in the expanding Dr. Ransom Greene Fernald School, formerly the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded. Dr. Fernald was a eugenist who believed that the mentally disabled should be segregated from the rest of the population. The story of this institution is online at http://www.city.waltham.ma.us/sites/walthamma/files/file/file/fernal_d_center_history.pdf

Eugenics was discredited after World War II, and like most mental institutions, the policies were changed to deinstitutionalize the mentally

handicapped, and the school was down-sized in 1972.

The children of Lawson Pace and Julia led more distinguished lives. There were nine children, but two didn't survive childhood, and there are two of the daughters Rae and Bay of which little is known. **Ernest Pace** (1899-1959) married Lottie Allen in her home town of River John, near Pictou and had two children. They moved to Halifax, where he became the Principal of Richmond primary school in the blue collar north end of Halifax.

Rev. **William King Pace** (1910-2001), a graduate of Dalhousie University and Pine Hill Divinity College, served the United Church of Canada in the Maritimes, Quebec and Ontario. He passed away in 2001 in Toronto. Surviving are his beloved wife of 65 years, Isabel (Munro); son, Clarence; four grandchildren; and two great-grandchildren. Isabel is from Westville, NS and they were married in 1936 at the United Church over which Rev. Pace was presiding.

Mae Victoria Pace (1894-1980) lived a long life, and chose to be buried with her parents in William Black cemetery in the church which the family supported through three generations.

Brewster Hague Pace (Bruce) (1895-1976) married Eva Graves in 1924 at the William Black Methodist church, and one of their children **Leonard Lawson Pace** was to become a very distinguished Nova Scotian - We let his obituary speak for itself :

"PACE Hon. Mr. Justice Leonard L.B.A. L.L.B. Q.C. M.L.A. 1928 - 1991

Supreme Court of Nova Scotia Appeals Division 1978 - 1990

M.L.A. Halifax St Margarets Cabinet Minister 1970 - 1978 Barrister 1954 - 1970

Graduate of Acadia and Dalhousie Universities (BA., LLB). Practiced law with Pace MacIntosh before entering politics. He served as Minister of Highways (1972), Minister of Mines and Minister i/c Communications (1973), Attorney General and Minister of Labor (1970) in the Liberal government under Premier Gerald Regan. Appointed Q.C. (1970). Appointed Justice of the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia, Appeals Division

(1978)."

Leonard has a substantial memorial with the Pace family in William Black Methodist cemetery in Glen Margaret. His life achievements have restored the Pace family to its previous place among the influential and privileged that they enjoyed in pioneer Virginia five decades earlier.

We are fortunate that **Eric Bleasdale Pace** (1897-1995), who outlived the whole family, has left us a story of the struggles of himself and the Lawson Pace family, when he wrote: "ON THE OCCASION OF THE 80TH BIRTHDAY PARTY OF ERIC B. PACE, SUMMER 1977

I was born on April 13, 1897 at Glen Margaret, went to school until 1910 and at 13 years old left school and took over my father's meat business in Halifax. I used to drive the horse team with a load of meat along the old Forks road by Woodens Bridge to Hubleys on the Bay Road and walked behind the team sometimes 3 or 4 miles to help the old horse with the load of meat. Often I would see a bunch of trees ahead of the horse and would think it was a bear so would crawl on the load till I got by. I usually left about 2:30AM and got back home that night about 10:00PM. I would buy a half pound of soda biscuits and some cheese and eat it in the stall with the horse, afraid to go to a restaurant.

Bruce and I never had any childhood life. We had to work all the time to help father and mother provide for the rest of the family. Times were very poor, but we always had plenty to eat. Father would go to Antigonish and get carloads of cattle and unload them at Richmond Station, north end of Halifax, and Bruce and I would drive them through Halifax. You can have an idea what that would be like with trolley cars and dogs before we got the cattle on the Bay Road, and would then have to walk and run from there home. As I grew older, Father had a vessel and used to butcher cattle on Big and Little Tancook Islands and take it to Halifax. I was the only one of the boys that wanted to go with him. No doubt that is why I took an interest in ships and like the water, and have enjoyed cruises so much since then. I never missed going to Halifax one week all those seven years in all kinds of weather, except one winter I worked at the Halifax Club and was paid \$25.00 a month -- up at 5:00AM each morning, two hours off in the afternoon, and back until 7:00PM. I dumped gallons of liquor down the sink after seals had been broken on bottles during parties. This could be quite a temptation, but my will

power to resist was no doubt due to the teaching of my mother who always asked us never to use alcohol at any time. In 1921 we bought a truck, so I was able to say good bye to the old horse.

When I was 29, I thought there must be a better life than freezing to death, so went to Waltham, Mass. and then to Taunton as a meat cutter for 4 1/2 years when I took sick with dry pleurisy and was sent home by the State to recuperate for six months. The doctor at home told me not to go back to work in the cold refrigerators so I decided to stay home, and on June 17, 1930 I bought out the Dauphinee business at Hackett's Cove. The first day of business I made \$2.78. I had to pay a girl in the store, and a man and wife to keep house, so you see things weren't very encouraging to start with.

In those days, there were no pensions of any kind and money was very scarce. People depended on fishing and that often wasn't very plentiful, but those old people were so good and honest, I shall never forget them. I had to try so many things to make ends meet. General store, fishing traps, pulp wood business, grocery truck down the shore. I was J.P., Coroner, County Councillor, fish dealer. In 1946, I took a heart attack and had to sell the store and move to Seabright to another store which was much smaller, and I thought I would be able to carry on a business there, but wasn't able to manage. I rented the store and moved to McDonald Street, and from there to Walnut Street in Halifax. After a couple of years, I got a job as Meat Inspector with the Federal Government and was there for 10 years and enjoyed it very much. I retired in 1963 and have travelled a lot since, and with my dear wife Louise have spent the last fourteen winters in Florida.

One of the most important events in my life I haven't mentioned thus far. In December, 1935 I married my wife, Louise and have been very happy with her. Without her, my life would have been without joy. We have three wonderful children, Thelma, Eric and Glenn.

We have made up in later years the fun and travelling which was lost to me in childhood. I thank the Good Lord for sparing me to reach 80 years and have fairly good health and a wonderful wife and children. I am so happy we are all together again with my children, grandchildren, relatives and friends on this, my belated birthday party and am able to share it with you all. I am only sorry that none of my brothers and sisters

are able to be with us."

DAVID REDMOND/EDITH PACE FAMILY AND DESCENDANTS

David, the second son of my great great grandparents James Redmond & Mary Catherine Boutilier, had the family which continued to occupy the Umlah land in Seabright. He married William Taylor's sister Emily Pace (1833-1908) in 1856, and they had a large family of eight. He died young at the age of 42, and was buried on his land in the Redmond cemetery, along with the four children who didn't live to marry - Fanny Alberta (1862-1865); Mary Elizabeth (1858-1867); David L (1867-1886) and Fanny Elizabeth (1869-1877).

The number of Redmonds in Halifax county peaked in the 1870s - then began the decline in family with the Redmond surname because of childhood deaths, more daughters than sons, and smaller families as people left St. Margaret's Bay for urban jobs. David's family was typical - only his favoured eldest son Edward and farmer James Roland remained in Seabright, half of his children died young, his three married daughters moved to the Halifax area, mostly in Dartmouth, and there was only one fisherman in his family (Richard Elongo 1881-1911, single).

His second son **James Thomas Redmond** became a contractor/builder in Halifax, and married Emma Boutilier, another of the huge Boutilier clan, and half first cousin to David's mother Mary Catherine. They had five children, mostly remaining in the Halifax area. Because of late birth registrations by affidavit, we learn that at least three were married. Margaret married Herbert Rozee in 1916 in Halifax - he was a baker. Emily Winnifred married Ernest Bendell in Halifax in 1913, a salesman from Newfoundland who became an accountant. Norman married American Beulah Miller in 1919 in Halifax, and worked as a chauffeur. Later they moved to Medford, Massachusetts, and Norman became a US citizen, a welder, and a Mason. Harry was single, and died young in 1922. Eldest daughter Olive moved to Worcestershire in England to marry Herbert Lloyd - Margaret came to visit her in Warwickshire in 1953, on the ship "Nova Scotia"

Emma Eliza Redmond (1861-?) married Richard **Wambolt** (1858-

1938) in Glen Margaret, but moved to Dartmouth to have their eight children. Richard was a Hack and Delivery stable owner initially, and later a fish dealer after 1906. They received a sad telegram in June of 1917 when it was confirmed that their son Harry had died on 4 Mar 1917 after his plane was shot down behind enemy lines in France.

Emma's daughters Florence, Eva and Margaret all married in Dartmouth, to laborer Almon Hitchey in 1906, contractor Walter Lownds in 1918, and soldier Grafton Carter in 1918, respectively. Two of their children died in infancy. Robert, the youngest, married Dolly Hudson, saleslady in 1923, at Emma and Richard's home at 197 Portland St in Dartmouth. This home stayed in the family for at least two generations. Robert and Dolly emigrated to Dedham, and later Attleboro Massachusetts, where they had a large family of sixteen. Robert was a jeweller who worked at the famous Balfour jewellery company, which made many of the fraternity, sorority and sports pins and jewellery. Eva and Walter moved to Somerville, Massachusetts (Boston), where she passed away in 1932. Walter was a house painter and contractor. Guy was the stay-at-home son who looked after his parents until their deaths in 1938. Grafton Carter worked for Imperial Oil and he and Margaret lived in 197 Portland after her parents' deaths, and in 1940 Walter and his 3 kids had also moved in after Eva passed away. Today the big house is next to a Tim Horton's parking lot.

Margaret Redmond (1865-bef 1954) married John Hunt (1861-1911), a teamster, but only had one child, Edward before John passed away. She later married a widower Howard Gaetz or Gates in 1920, who brought along eight step-children. In the 1911 census John & Margaret were living with a Hunt niece and nephew. Howard was a carpenter, and lived to be 92 (1862-1954) - his unmarried daughter Vera was living with him in Dartmouth when he passed away - she was 42.

Eldest son **Edward Redmond** (1856-1934) lived and farmed on the Umlah land of his father and grandmother, and married into the Isnor family, hence becoming a distant cousin of US president Dwight D Eisenhower. His wife Alice Isnor lived from 1855-1932, and had thirteen children after their marriage in 1879. His branch of the family tree is well documented, and is the branch where it is easiest to find living cousins, including Redmond cousins, thanks to the research of his great grandchild Mike Bonang, which was kindly passed on to me by my third

cousin, and grandchild of Edward - Frank Redmond, whose family lived on Edward's land until earlier this century. These living cousins are named in my family tree (if you have living person access), and if you wish to contact them, I suggest that you find Mike Bonang or Frank Redmond. I will limit my discussions of these living relatives, of whom I have no direct knowledge.

Edward had an interesting career in politics, being the local representative for Seabright on the Halifax County municipal council when that Council was in charge of making the decisions regarding recovery from the disastrous explosion in Halifax harbour on Dec 6, 1917. His committee was in charge of allocating money as "Overseers of the Poor", which included a large part of the population of Halifax who had been left homeless by the explosion. The county jail suffered considerable damage in the explosion, and was one of the priorities for repair. The county home for the insane, which housed 29 insane men, 14 insane women, and their caretakers - 33 sane men and 35 sane women, requested blankets to keep warm because all of their windows had been blown out.

There were many familiar names on that Council, or with related government supported positions. Richard Bishop was the representative of Beechville (brother of my great grandmother); Melvin Beck represented East Dover (on the Catholic side of the Redmond family); and Richard Coolen was the presiding officer of Dover (great grand-son of Mary Redmond - Thomas's daughter who stayed in Shad Bay). Fred Umlah became Chief county Constable and inspector of pedlars' licenses, and George and Joseph Umlah were overseers of the Poor for Spryfield and Terrence Bay respectively (descendants of our Nancy Umlah's brother William). Bishop, Beck and Redmond joined forces against consolidation of the district to reduce the number of councillors (from 21) - as they represented three of the smallest communities.

Other things of interest from the Council Minutes (Google Edward Redmond Halifax or go to <http://halifax.ca/archives/CountyMinutes/documents/312-1a-1918-1920.pdf>) is the financial allocations of \$3984 for support of the poor, to be doled out by 21 "Overseers of the Poor"; and \$3238 for blankets and repairs to the Hospital for the insane. The spread of tuberculosis was a big problem, and rated a grant of \$500 to the anti TB league. George

Longard, who served as a justice of the peace and chief of the 1881 and 1891 Censuses in St Margaret's Bay, was appointed "Temperance Inspector".

Edward was on a jury which found that Alice's father John Isnor was guilty of murder, and he was executed on 20 Sep 1891. So far I have been unable to find any details, except that he is supposed to have walked from Truro with some "boogers" to Hackett's Cove after killing the man.

Edward and Alice lived long healthy lives, but many of their children were not so fortunate. Three died in their infancy (**John R** 1893-1894; **William E** 1882-1884; and **Clarence Rubin** 1889-90), and two suffered heart failure as young adults (single fisherman **Richard E** 1881-1911 and married labourer **Edward Clarence** 1890-1931). All were buried by Edward and Alice in the Redmond cemetery, to be joined later by their parents. In addition to mourning the loss of their nephew Harry Wambolt in World War I, four months later it was their turn to mourn, as they received news that their son **David Clyde Redmond** (1887-1917) had been killed in action in France. Another son **Thomas Edward Redmond** may have suffered from mental illness and died at the age of 29 in the NS Hospital, which was probably the Cole Harbour Hospital for the Insane which his father helped repair after the 1917 Halifax Explosion, and which was finally closed in 2001 - Mike Bonang notes only that Thomas "disappeared".

However their other six children fared much better, marrying and having large families with numerous grand-children, many still living, but spread far and wide. **Maud Alberta Marsh** (Redmond) married Fireman Joseph Garfield Marsh from St Croix Nova on the Bay of Fundy side of Nova Scotia. They had five children and at least 23 grandchildren and great grandchildren, most living today. Mike Bonang who did the research on Edward's branch of the family is a great grand-son through Maud's eldest daughter Muriel Trethewey (Marsh) and her daughter Faye Alberta Bonang (Trethewey). Muriel's husband Harold Trethewey was a Quarryman. Six of Muriel's brothers and sisters married and Mike has documented several of their children. Her youngest brother Clyde Dixon Marsh (1919-1942) died in a car accident on the Bedford highway.

James Roland Redmond (1903-1990) was the farmer in the family who stayed on the Seabright property most of his life. He married Bernice

Boutilier in 1921, and had five children Gerald, Wayne, Shirley who Clarence Morrison, Lillian who married Fred Rickie and Dorothy who married Wilfred Covey and had a son Kevin. Mike Bonang didn't give wives for Gerald and Wayne, so they may have no descendants. I haven't been able to link Bernice to our branches of the Boutilier family.

John Earl (Irvine?) Redmond (1897-1951) married Amanda Deal (1907-1984) in 1929, and had four sons and two daughters. Sadly, he contracted Tuberculosis, and was unable to work after 1937 at age 40 - he had been a labourer (probably on the farm and in forestry) for twenty years. He died in the Kentville Sanatorium in 1951 - leaving Amanda to take care of six children. They lived on the Seabright land, so must have been supported by James Roland and Harold Redmond's families. Amanda was buried in the Redmond cemetery beside her husband. The children married, and are contemporaries of my cousin Frank Redmond, but Mike Bonang's research didn't find any children of the three eldest sons Lawrence, Douglas and Edward. Marion married Eric Crosby and had six children, and Lois married first Albert White and then Joseph Leprise, with one son Dale. The youngest son Vernon Redmond (1940-2006) had two children according to his obituary - Julia living in Calgary, and **Greg Redmond** living in Vancouver.

Harold Redmond (1899-1975), the youngest of Edward's sons, was a fisherman. He waited until he was 38 to marry Grace MacDonald. She was from Halifax, so they were married there at 550 Robi St. They returned to raise their family of four on the Umlah/Redmond land at Seabright. Sheila lived only a couple of months. Carol married Wilbert Kaiser and had two children Holly and Eric. Douglas married Rose Mason in 1964 and had three children Edward, Angela and Melanie. The youngest son Frank is my cousin and friend interested in the family history who has found all that I know about Edward Redmond's line. He married Marcella Berringer, who sadly passed away just a couple of years ago. She and Frank lived on the Seabright property with his sister Carol's family until just seven years ago in 2005, when Frank and Marcella retired and moved to Digby. Amazingly, with thirteen children of Edward & Alice Redmond, only two living great grandsons with the Redmond name have been produced - Greg (Vernon's son) in Vancouver, and Edward (Doug's son) in Nova Scotia. I'm hoping that Frank will send more about what happened to all of the Edward Redmond grandsons.

Our Redmond branch is in danger of going extinct, although we have many living cousins from Edward's daughters and grand-daughters.

THE CATHOLIC BRANCH IN SHAD BAY (4TH COUSINS)

These are the descendants of my great great grandfather James William Redmond's two brothers Thomas and David, and his sister Mary. From their father Thomas's will, the four siblings each inherited one fourth of the Shad Bay land that was originally owned by David and William Redmond in a land grant. The origins of this land grant remain one of my toughest "Brick Walls" - I would love to know who William was, how he was related to David, and how they came to receive the land grant. After their mother Nancy (Umlah)'s death in 1848 Thomas' land was divided four ways, with Thomas, David and Mary choosing to live on their share of the land, which was to support their families for three generations.

We return to the drowning death of their father Thomas Redmond, and Nancy and their three children finding his body, at Selig's landing - the site of the ferry of John Francis Selig who maintained the only ferry crossing connecting the shores of Shad Bay to the main trunk road from Prospect to Halifax. John was most kind and obliging, taking many passengers each year, without pay, in cases of illness and Divine Worship. I excerpt from a letter from Marjorie Tremaine given to Eric Collier on the occasion of his 80th birthday "The history of Shad Bay".

"Going by water from Prospect towards Shad Bay are two huge rocks rising 80/90 feet out of the water and measuring possibly seven or eight acres each. These are called the Gull Rocks for obvious reasons as seagulls have more or less taken them over and this is where they nest. Some years ago cattle and sheep were rowed out to these rocks for summer pasture. The Gull Rocks mark the entrance to Shad Bay. A bit further in is Selig's Landing. A couple of miles off are the Cannon Rocks - so called because a hollow is worn into them by the pounding of the sea during rough and stormy weather, and they make a booming sound as of guns.

You are now in the middle of the bay, and an Island called Cochranes but familiarly called the big island, thickly wooded with spruce and patches

of low bushes where blue berries grew in abundance. In front of the "Big Island" is what is called the "Little Island" not too far off shore. Tradition has it that some years ago a daring Pirate, Captain Howles, buried a large amount of gold and valuables in this vicinity. A number of men sometime ago started digging for the supposedly hidden treasure. One Parker furnished information relative to the exact location of this mythical treasure and work was begun under Charles Ganton, an American. As narrated by Parker, a big flat rock and other things connected with these stories, were encountered by the diggers and after sinking some 30 feet and nothing was found, the work was abandoned in December 1892.

The head of Shad Bay is just beyond Cochrane's Island, and there the lands become quite hilly and forested. Only the land beside Cochrane's island was flat enough to build on, and it is there that the Redmond and Coolen ancestors built their houses and had their large families. The Redmond land claim included the entire head of the bay, and when Thomas' land was divided between his four children in 1846 just before Nancy's death, each part was divided in four: the habitable land around the tiny beach; Cochrane's Island; the hilly unimproved land at the end of the Bay, and the marshland on the opposite side of the Island.

THOMAS REDMOND'S DESCENDANTS

I will start with Thomas, the youngest brother, because he originally moved with his mother and James to Seabright. There he married Elizabeth Ruder in the Anglican church in French Village and had two sons there - David T and James. When the Shad Bay land was transferred in 1845, he moved his family to the land on Shad Bay, as James was to inherit his mother's land in Seabright.

We know that they had a youngest son Lawrence in Shad Bay about 1854 (from censuses), but there is confusion in the available references as to whether there were two daughters Isabell and Anne Elizabeth, both born around 1850, or one with different names. In the 1871 census, both parents Thomas and Elizabeth have passed away in the previous decade, and we have four children remaining on the land - David is 33, James is 27, Isabel is 25 and Lawrence is 17. In the next decade there are two marriages for Isabel - one to Samuel White in 1870, the other to Adam

Laidlaw in 1878 - both giving their age as being born around 1850.

I have concluded that the daughter who married Samuel White was in fact Anne Elizabeth (Isabel being a common nickname of Elizabeth), largely on the evidence in James Redmond (her brother)'s will, which names his sister as Annie White. It is curious that on the marriage registration the father is given as Thomas, but the mother is given as Mary Hubley (from a large St Margaret's Bay family) - so Annie may have been the result of an affair, but it is curious that mother Elizabeth wouldn't object to raising her, and that she would go by the same (nick)name as her half-sister Isabel, and I find no evidence of a death of a Mary Hubley. There is an 1850 baptism for Anne Elizabeth Redmond in the Prospect Catholic church.

The other marriage for Isabel is in 1878 to Adam Laidlaw - she was the Isabel who lived with her parents in 1871 (census), and on her marriage registration her parents are given as Thomas & Elizabeth. I believe that she died between 1878 and 1881, as in the census Adam has gone home to Halifax to live with his parents, and there are no apparent children.

Elizabeth died in 1861 in Shad Bay, and five years later Thomas married Catherine Christian, and they had one daughter Mary, who unfortunately died from diphtheria at the age of ten. Then only two years later, Thomas choked on some meat and died, leaving his adult sons, who were also fishermen, to fend for the family themselves.

It seems that eldest son **David T Redmond** did not marry - he is shown as single, Catholic and a fisherman in all of the censuses from 1881-1901. He was always living on Thomas' share of the Shad Bay land - with his siblings as neighbours, or co-inhabitants. There was obviously a close friendship with the Collier family, who had lost their father Robert in 1869. 12-year-old John Collier lived with the four Redmond siblings in 1871 - his brother Alfred was living with Mary Innes (Redmond), one of Uncle James William Redmond's children. She was later to die from TB, and in the 1881 census both John and Alfred Collier were living with David.

The other siblings all married, but didn't live long lives - David was the first born and may have been the last to die, in 1902 at the age of 65.

Isabel Laidlaw (Redmond) married Adam Laidlaw in 1878, but wasn't

with him in the 1881 census, so probably died along with her first baby. Adam was a miner when he married in Shad Bay, but three years later the only Adam Laidlaw in Nova Scotia was living in Halifax with his parents, and no children, and he was a painter

The two sons of Thomas who married chose two sisters - Mary Jane for James, and Celia for Lawrence. Their father George Longard (1818-1897) was born in Lunenburg, and married four times. In 1881 he was the enumerator for the 1881 census, and made his own family number 1 on Page 1. He was living next to James Redmond and his family with his daughter Mary Jane, and Celia was 16 living with George, who was between marriages, and two step-siblings Emma and George from his third wife Amelia Murphy. Celia and Mary Jane's mother was Mary Riley. Celia was to marry Lawrence two years later.

George was prominently involved in the Prospect Catholic church, frequently witnessing registrations. George Jr was later to become a representative for Prospect on the Halifax County Council. The three censuses done by George are interesting in showing that everyone in the Shad Bay/Prospect area are Roman Catholic - all of the men are fishermen - and most families are of Irish descent. None of the older generations of fishermen had any education - most of George's contemporaries were unable to sign their name.

James Redmond (1843-1895) left a will which answered some questions about Thomas' branch of the Redmond family, but added some new questions. He and Mary Jane Longard were married in 1872, and the 1881 census shows James alone with four children Archibald (9), Martha (6) and Edmond (5) - birth registrations showed a fourth child George born 1874. Apparently Mary Jane died between 1877-1881, and son George also failed to live to the next census. In his will, he leaves his possessions and land to his son Edward Morgan Redmond, and his daughter Martha Alice Redmond. I can find neither James nor a son Edward or Archibald in the 1891 census, but his daughter Martha is on Thomas' Shad Bay land next to Lawrence Redmond's family and John Collier's family. James was living in Shad Bay when he died four years later. 'Tis a mystery, but my best guess is that Archibald is the same son as Edward Morgan.

The other strange thing about the will is that his youngest son Edmond is

mentioned in a clause requiring the inheritance to be held in trust if either Edward or Martha marries, until Edmond is 21. I think he wanted to ensure that one of them would stay on the land to look after Edmond until he was 21, but it is odd that no inheritance was left to him.

The will shows how close James was to John Collier, as he named him and two of his children as secondary heirs if his children both died, as well as his brother Lawrence's two children Thomas and Lawrence. He also named John as his executor. In the mean-time, John had married Agnes Redmond, a grand-daughter of David Redmond - James William (GGGfather)'s older brother.

Lawrence Redmond (1854-bef 1891) married Celia Longard (Mary Jane's half-sister) in 1883, and they had two sons Thomas and Lawrence. Lawrence Sr., like all the males in Thomas' line, was a fisherman - apparently he died sometime between 1888 and 1891. In the 1891 census Celia is widowed, and has only her two sons with her, living on the Thomas Redmond land in Shad Bay. In 1901, Lawrence and Thomas have been adopted by John & Agnes Collier - at 17, Lawrence is already a fisherman.

Thomas' other daughter **Anne Elizabeth Redmond** (1851-bef 1911) married Samuel White in 1872. As the marriage registration gave the bride's name as Isabella, I thought that Anne's older sister was the bride. However, in her brother's will, he mentions that his sister is named Annie White, and the 1891-1901 census confirm Samuel's wife is Ann. Samuel and Ann had six children from 1873-1891, and all are in the 1901 census. However in 1911, only the two oldest boys are still in Shad Bay (single and with no occupation?), and the other children are hard to find because of how common their names are. None of them have an online marriage or death registration.

So, we come to the end of the genealogical evidence of descendants of my Great great grandfather James' youngest brother. There were only four Redmond grand-sons and six children from Thomas' daughters, and the last evidence of their existence was the 1901 Canada census, as none could be found in 1911, or in any of the twentieth century online Nova Scotia vital statistics. This is what happens when no living cousin interested in family history can be found - perhaps there aren't any living

cousins in this branch.

DAVID REDMOND DESCENDANTS

James' older brother David has left us with many more descendants, and a few cousins who have been involved in genealogical research. Brian Hiscock was involved in collecting family information in the 1990s before there was much available on-line - he comes from the Duggan line. Chris Tanner from Halifax, and James WJ Collier of Maine are both descended from the Colliers, who have been friends with Redmonds for a long time - I think Robert Collier was a friend from Newfoundland, and his son John married one of David's granddaughters through his son John (Agnes). By the time of the 1881 census, there were over forty people with the surname Redmond, all Roman Catholic, living on the Shad Bay land of Thomas Redmond Sr, which had been divided between his four children by 1846.

David Redmond (1789-1873) was slow to marry - first marrying Margaret Henry by bond in 1819, and when she died young without producing children, he then married 20 year old **Mary Christian** (1803-1866), who was the daughter of Catherine Coolen, a sister of David's sister Mary's husband William Frederick Coolen. David and Mary had four sons and four daughters, and many grand-children.

As in the eldest sons of brothers James and Thomas, David's eldest son **Thomas Redmond** (1824-bef 1901), produced few children, if they married at all, but were responsible men who looked after their extended families. Thomas married one of the **Cavanagh** sisters **Ann** (1833-1912) in 1853 and in twenty years were able to have only one daughter Ellen, who was 9 in the 1871 census. She probably didn't survive to adulthood, although it is possible that she married and left the area before the 1881 census. Thomas and Annie adopted two children Francis Woodling, and Walter Scott who took the Redmond name, and they lived on the Redmond land with Annie into the early 1900s, never marrying. Thomas and Walter were both fishermen, as was his father Thomas, and all of his brothers and nephews. In the 1891 census, Annie was a widow, but she had added another presumably adopted son Edward, who was

not with them in Shad Bay in 1901.

JOHN REDMOND'S CHILDREN AND THE BECK FAMILY

John Redmond (1827-bef 1901) , David&Alice's second son, married a Scottish lassie Alice Laidlaw (1832-aft 1901)- her brother Adam had married Isabella, one of first cousin James' daughters. He was a fisherman, but also did some farming on the small plots near to the beach that were cleared. They had ten children, including Agnes Collier, who we discuss in the next section. Their first-born daughter **Mary Ann Duggan (Redmond)** (1854-1884) married David Duggan in 1874 in the Catholic church in Prospect.

David was from East Dover, but lived on the Redmond land in Shad Bay while the couple had four daughters who didn't survive their childhood, and one son John who provided all our living cousins in the Duggan line. When Mary Ann passed away, David went back to East Dover to marry Esther Crooks (daughter of Caroline Redmond, my great grandfather's sister) and have another seven children, whose descendants would be third cousins. They are mostly buried in St James Cemetery in West Dover.

Mary Ann's son **John Clarence Duggan** (1878-1942) married Edith Zinck (1885-1965), so his line has been well researched by RonZinck54 in Rootsweb's family tree. It shows that Edith is one of sixteen siblings, and is in the fifth generation of Zincks back to Johann Caspar Zinck from Klein Haubach, Loewenstein who came with his family to Halifax in 1752, and then to Lunenburg. John & Edith had four children, one dying in infancy, but thanks to **Brian Hiscock**, son of Dora Hiscock (Duggan), we have obituaries for Dora and her sister Coral Loxdale (Duggan) which show several children and grandchildren living today in Timberlea, (just west of Halifax) and Calgary. Brian has been interested in genealogy for many years, and quite a few refer to his early notes before everything was more online. The Hiscock and Loxdale families are both Seventh Day Adventists.

David William Redmond (1856-1934) married two of the Longard sisters - he had two children with Emilia, and in 1891 was a widower with Mary Ann his only surviving daughter, living with his parents John

& Alice. Then later that year, he married Celia, who was the widow of David's first cousin Lawrence Redmond. I haven't been able to find any more children, or find Mary Ann in a marriage. David was more fortunate than his wives, and lived to 78 in Shad Bay, as a fisherman.

Jessie Beck (Redmond) (1857-1915) married Martin Beck (1853-1938). The villages along the Atlantic coastline alternate between Catholic and Protestant - Prospect and Shad Bay are Catholic, and the next town two bays south is East Dover, which is Catholic, and then across the bay is West Dover, and then down to Peggy's Cove, which are both Protestant. Jessie is not the only Redmond or Coolen daughter to move with her man to East Dover, where Martin's family had land. Keep in mind that Shad Bay may be 15 miles away from East Dover by land, but only a few minutes by boat. Other descendant families living there include the Forens; McGraths; Coolens, and now the eleven children and many cousins of the Martin & Jessie family. The St Thomas cemetery in East Dover is almost half descendants of our David Redmond from Ireland.

Of Jessie & Martin's eleven children, four died young (Michael, Alice, Thomas & Liola), and three of the daughters (Nora, Elmira and Myrtle) probably married in the gaps between Nova Scotia marriage registrations, to men unknown, and didn't stay in East Dover. The remaining three children: Mabel married Richard Coolen, and lost one of their three babies; Martin, nicknamed "Quinnie" married Pearl Graves - Aunt "Pearlie" that Ruth Beck remembered, and John married a Duggan in Halifax.

The eldest son Raymond (1878-1945) is the grandfather of the favorite of the cousins I haven't actually met - **Ruth Beck**. She is a teacher in Ontario, who goes home to visit Shad Bay every summer, and plans to retire there. She was one of the first to find my web-site, and was absolutely thrilled to find all of the information I had collected on her ancestors. She also found that the Coolen and Collier children among her childhood friends were also her cousins! Her father Gerald died in 1967, when she was just a child, so she was happy to read about the Beck, Redmond and Coolen history.

She sent me the following wonderful account of what it was like growing up in Shad Bay, where she lived, and East Dover, where she frequently

visited her Aunt Rita:

" What to say and where to begin? Growing up "on the Prospect Road" in Shad Bay, I felt was something special. Every second village down the Prospect Road is Catholic and our village had a church (St. Joseph -a part of Our lady of Mount Carmel in the village of Prospect) a school, a corner store, a graveyard and two restaurants. Most villages had a store and some had a gas station. Shad Bay had roughly 100 homes spread out along the coast. There are about 10 villages down the Prospect Road from Halifax to East Dover.

Most importantly was the fact we had a beach-Coolen's Beach. Everyday waking up I saw the ocean and learned to tell the weather by watching the sea. The beach is where we spent most of our summers as it was just across the road. Every summer we would also go out to East Dover for a clambake as my aunt Vera Fader(Beck) would come up from the US.

The old homestead was a "saltbox" home with cables on the four corners to keep it from blowing away as there was no foundation. If you have ever watched The Shipping News many parts were filmed in East Dover and cables similar to those of Beck House secure one of the homes once it is moved in the movie. As a child it was fascinating as there was no running water only a pump and an outhouse up the hill. There was also a crevice in the rocks that once it had rained and the sun warmed the water it was used as a bathtub, by my father and siblings growing up. We also would walk the Shad Bay coast at lowtide down to Brennen's Road/Selig's Road and we would go past Redmond's Island.

I remember the Redmond's house - it was on land we referred to as "The Turn" the main road branched off to a dirt road leading to the beach. The Coolens all lived in this area as well.

Sadly after Frank Coolen died, the beach was bought and a new house was built and the beach was no longer open to the public. The Beck house was also torn down rebuilt, landscaped and now it does not resemble the place of my memories at all. Our school bus driver was from East Dover and always called me "Little Rita" after my aunt Rita.

I knew the Coolens were related to me though I was not aware my grandmother was a Coolen or that she was from Shad Bay. My mother's

family came to Halifax after the Halifax Explosion, from Newfoundland and she grew up with no extended family at all. When my father died and my mother remarried and moved out of Shad Bay, other than Beck cousins I went to school with I never gave them another thought. All grandparents were dead on both sides before I was born and my father was the youngest with a 20 something year gap between him and his oldest sibling. With my grandparents being dead and not seeing any photos of them it was if they did not exist. I know my father is buried near his parents yet that did not make them real to me either. I remember an elderly lady named Pearlie Beck (she was married to Quinnie, he was deceased) who lived in Shad Bay –I didn't even know I was related to her.

When I first started teaching in Malton Ontario outside of Mississauga the students would ask me what I was. I did not understand the question but as it was a very multicultural area it dawned on me they wanted my background. I must admit other than knowing Beck's beer was German therefore Beck must be German I had no idea of my heritage. I called my mum who informed me we were a Heinz 57- a mixture of Irish, Scottish, Welsh and English.

I became more interested when my doctor asked for a family history of how people died and I had no idea.

I was watching a TV show "Who Do You Think You Are?" where celebrities follow their family trees and the advertisement for Ancestry.ca came on so I thought I'd try to find out about my mum's side of the family. My mum died a year and a half ago and I didn't have enough info on her parents so I went the Beck Route.

I find the Redmond link especially interesting. I met a fellow teacher who I hit it off with immediately and became great friends with, who is a Redmond. My childhood friend (who was a Collier from Shad Bay) her mum now hooks rugs and often does water scenes of the bay. Yet when I bought one of her rugs I bought the one that reminded me of the old Redmond place "down the turn"!"

The Beck family is another of the Lunenburg Protestant families - his grandparents Michael Beck and Catherine Knickle were the first of the Beck family to move to Prospect, about 1815. Michael's grandfather

Johann Michael was the first to come to Lunenburg on the ship the "Sally" in 1852, from Wurttenburg, now part of Germany. He was only 17, but listed himself as a farmer. He married Maria Elenora Myra in 1854, one of the first to marry in the new St John's Anglican Church in Lunenburg.

Ruth's grandfather Raymond Beck (1878-1945) was a fisherman (surprise!). He married another Coolen daughter Bertha, and they had eight children in East Dover. Three died as infants, Aunt Rita married Lawrence Bonang, Ralph married, and Ruth didn't, both living their whole life in East Dover, and the youngest one Gerald Michael was Ruth's father, who died young at age 44 in 1967 - the family was living in Shad Bay. Interestingly, Jessie Beck (Redmond) was a midwife, and delivered her 6th grandchild Maxwell herself. In the custom of the times, she filled in her name on the birth registrations using her husband's name - Mrs. Martin Beck M.H. Maxwell went on to marry his third cousin Ruby Duggan.

Now back to Jessie's siblings - children of John & Alice Redmond - James died as a baby; **Adam Redmond** (1859-1921) married Jessie's sister-in-law Bridget Beck, and had two children John (1847-1934) and Jessie; **Alice Redmond** (1865-1925) married William Foren, lived in McGrath's Cove (the one next to East Dover), and had five children - their eldest Emma moved away, but the others all lived there all their lives, living next door to their Aunt Mary McGrath (John's youngest sister) in McGrath's Cove.

Honora Redmond (1865-1933) died of TB after marrying longshoreman David Parr, and having three daughters in Halifax. David must have been a drinker, as he died of cirrhosis of the liver, but survived to age 71. Two of his daughters married in Halifax - Mary to iron moulder John Hobson in 1920, and Lyla to Walter McLennan in 1922.

Eliza Redmond (1867-1905) married Dr. Walter E Tyler, an American medical doctor, and had five children. She probably expected a long and prosperous life with the good doctor, but, alas, the family fell into very bad health - four of the five children dying as children, the doctor dying of a heart attack at only 42, and, after a few years living in Halifax with her sister Honora, Eliza herself died of TB.

The youngest son **John Redmond** married Jennie McGrath in Halifax in

1901, but I couldn't find them as a family in 1911 - there was a carpenter John Redmond boarding by himself in 1911 - he had been a fisherman when they were married.

The fifth child was **Agnes Redmond** (1861-1944), who married John Collier and had eleven children living on Redmond land in Shad Bay. John had been raised by another Redmond - David T, son of Thomas Redmond, next to the Coolens and to John Redmond's family, including Agnes. His father Robert died from TB in 1870. I tried to find what happened to all of his eight children: Emily/Emma was a servant to a Halifax family (19); James was staying with William & Catherine Boutilier, probably his mother Mary Boutilier's youngest brother - I couldn't find Mary, so she may have predeceased Robert; James (10) was with Mary Innes (Redmond) daughter of James my gggrandfather, whose four children hadn't survived. She died of TB the next year, but seemingly James survived, as cousin Chris Tanner found his death in Washington DC in 1914.

THE COLLIER FAMILY

John Collier and Agnes had eleven children. In those days the dread disease, Diphtheria, was known to be a killer and few survived. An outbreak of this plague occurred in the small community and five out of the eleven Collier children died within three days. The last child was buried on Redmonds hill at 2 o'clock in the afternoon and a new baby was born at midnight. Strangely the new infant didn't contract the disease, and that was the end of the epidemic.

Tragedy was still to follow the Colliers. On October 10, 1910, John Collier and his son Jim, went out to look at their nets. The weather darkened and changed, and a heavy squall blew up suddenly. They started for shore, but on the way in, about 200 yards from shore their boat capsized and they were thrown in the water. The father was unable to swim. His son Jim grabbed an oar and started to swim towards his father, but trying to hold his father up and swim through the rough water was too much for the young man. He reached the shore exhausted, but his father drowned near the cannon rocks.

John Brennan who was a champion oarsman, had sighted the Collier boat coming up into the bay and at that time they seemed to be making it, so, unfortunately he started up over the hill towards his home -otherwise he could have taken a boat out and rescued them. John Collier was 51 years old at the time of his death, and Jim was 15 years of age. John was the first one to be buried in the new Shad Bay cemetery.

These Collier stories are taken from Marjorie Tremaine's history of Shad Bay, as written from Eric Collier's memories and presented to him on his 82nd birthday in 1980. Eric was the fourth surviving son of John & Agnes. Eric was crippled with polio, and couldn't get out to join the other boys in their play. As his mother went about her household chores, she talked to her son and told him of the above hardships they had all endured and recounted these happenings to him.

Eric, for many years, kept a little general store on the main highway in the center of the village. The store was a gathering place for everyone in the community and from all the villages along the western shore, Halifax to Peggy's Cove. He was a friend to all and especially to the children. Due to his infirmity, Eric retired from business a couple of years ago and now lives in a house directly across from his store, along with his youngest son, his wife and family. He has many friends who call in and play a game of crib, chat with him and help to pass the time. His birthday, which is September 21st, is always a big occasion, because all his friends and neighbours make a call or send cards to a very fine resident of Shad Bay.

Here Marjorie adds a few comments on the way of life for these early settlers. "The winters were exceptionally hard. They hunted deer, rabbits, moose, squirrel and porcupine for meat, and fish, of course, was their staple food. Most of the men wore moose shanks on their feet in winter. These were made of the leg of the animal, being bone and the hide split down so the foot could go in, and then laced up with leather thongs.

Coming from Halifax in the early days when Eric was a child, you came up to a Bay house owned by one Joseph McCleave. This was the first house on the Arm Hill. Then as you turned into the Prospect Road, there was a house owned by a man of the name Jack Umlah who operated a small farm with a few chickens etc. A slight incline was known as

Shoemaker's Hill, named for a shoemaker named Herbert Welsman. Then you travelled along a fairly level stretch on which there was a cabin occupied by one, Toler. Where the watershed property is now situated were two farms owned by Dave and Archie Drysdale.

Then several miles along was Charlotte Drysdale (nee Walsh from Prospect). At Charlotte's everyone put up their horses, got a hot toddy, a meal, and a pair of socks if they needed them. You came next to the home of Joshua Umlah, who travelled with the mail to Halifax, then a level stretch of road known as the long bog. The next house was at Hatchett's Lake owned by William Umlah. You passed Hatchett's Lake, down Christian's hill into White's Lake where the only house at that time was owned by Pat Kerwick. Then along the way came houses owned by Charles Christian and Nick Christian.

You are now at the Prospect turnoff and you proceed straight ahead up Cahill's Hill and on the left was the home of Michael Burke (& his wife Aunt Catherine Redmond, daughter of David). A bit further along on the right was the home of a Dr. Tyler who married Eric's aunt Lylie (daughter of John&Alice), and this section was always known as Tyler's Patch."

I have been contacted by two of John&Agnes' descendants - lawyer James W.J. Collier Esq. of Bar Harbour, Maine (jwcollier@me.acadia.net), and his niece Chris Tanner of Halifax. Chris has collected over five hundred descendants of John & Agnes Collier (Redmond), most of whom are living fourth cousins of mine. You can find them by contacting Chris by email (nymets_30@yahoo.ca), or look at her online family tree in Rootsweb's World Family Tree [Colliers @ Chris Tanner](#). Chris has found the following descendants:

Older brother **James Arthur Collier**, the son who tried to rescue his father, married Emma Yeadon and had in addition to the 5 dead children, five living ones: a daughter married to a POWER, a daughter married to Morley 3 gch, daughter married to Olsen, 1 gch, son married to McGillivary, 3gch; and one unmarried son, and one unmarried daughter. So a total of 39 grandchildren, 49 great grandchildren and four gggchildren.

The other older brother **John Geoffrey Collier** married Catherine

Hutchinson in 1923 and had six children - John died in 1948 from an accidental gunshot chest wound. They had 20 grandchildren Conrod(4), Dunbar (4) and Collier(12); and 21 ggchildren Collier(12), Conrod(3), Comeau, Thomas(2), Langille, and Dunbar(2).

Eric and his wife Hallie Yeadon had three children; Jean Grant (Collier), and 2 sons; 14 grandchildren: Grant(6), Collier(6) and Breau(2 stepgch); 13ggchildren: Grant(4), Brown(2), Collier(5), Lawrence(2).

Youngest daughter **Agnes Marion Collier** married Michael Wallace McDade in 1919 and had one child John, and oldest surviving son **David Robert Collier** married Ellen Murdoch in 1925 without children.

Younger son **William Norwood Collier** is the grandfather of lawyer James W.J. Collier Esq, and great grandfather of Chris Tanner. He married Marjorie Spares in 1931 in Enfield NS, and had 3 sons, 17 grandchildren, all Colliers, and 29ggchildren: Collier(8), Burke(2), Tanner(2), Pottie(4), Thomas(4), Scully(3), Tattrie(2), Backman(2), Marsh(2) and MacDonald(2), plus 9 gggchildren.

So it seems that John Collier and Agnes Redmond have left more descendants than all of the other Redmonds put together.

One more interesting footnote: - John Collier's younger brother Alfred was also raised by the Redmonds, married and lived in Shad Bay on the Redmond lands, after his father Robert Collier passed away leaving four orphaned sons. Alfred's second wife was named Catherine Redmond, but she was born in St John's, Newfoundland in 1866. This makes me wonder if David Redmond was a son of a Newfoundland family that survived there into the mid 1800s, perhaps as friends to Robert Collier Srs family. Her parents were John Redmond and Johanna Wallace, both born in Newfoundland.

Three of John's brothers, David, Robert and James all emigrated to Minneapolis, married and had families there, and then moved to Anacortes and Bellingham in Washington State. James was a gill net fisherman in Bellingham, and died young at the age of 54. Robert & Mary had 2 kids in Seattle in 1920, and Robert may have become a single customs inspector in the US Consulate in Vancouver BC in 1930. David worked in the asbestos industry, but lived to the ripe old age of 90, when

he died on the ocean and was buried at sea. He married a Swedish girl Inga Anderson, and they are buried at the nordic Grandview Cemetery in Anacortes, which maintains its own Ancestry family tree.

David's daughter Hattie married Swedish fisherman Siegfried Hillstrand, and their son Earl and grandson John W both fished in Alaska, and are memorialized in 2002 in Find A Grave - "THE HOMER FISHING COMMUNITY lost a friend when John Hillstrand died Aug. 7 in an Anchorage hospital from complications stemming from pneumonia. He turned 62 on July 31. Hillstrand, whose father, Earl Hillstrand, founded Land's End Resort, commercial fished in various Alaska fisheries for 30 years before starting Coal Point Trading Company, a fish-packing house serving the Homer Spit's halibut charter industry. Coal Point will continue operating under the management of John's wife, Nancy Hillstrand. In addition to the business' small retail seafoods storefront, David Hillstrand, one of John's five sons, estimated that Coal Point might be responsible for packaging up to 15,000 pounds of sport-caught halibut fillets on a good summer day. Those fillets are typically vacuum-sealed, frozen and often shipped Outside for the charter clientele. "His thing was to do one thing and do it good," David Hillstrand said. "And that's what he's done with Coal Point. ... He's specifically designed it to cater to the charter operators."

And that concludes the story of the large families of Robert Collier, and of his son John's family with David's daughter Agnes Redmond.

DAVID'S YOUNGER CHILDREN IN HALIFAX AND THE US

James Redmond (1833-bef1911) married Eliza Mullins (1837-1920) in Prospect in 1855. He was a fisherman, Irish and Catholic. They had eleven children with at least three dying as children. Their children in general didn't stay in Shad Bay - migrating to Halifax or Massachusetts

David Redmond (1856-1904) married Letitia Stone (1862-1895) and moved to Burlington Mass. after their first child Mary - William and Charles were born there before Letitia died. David brought his three children home, and in 1901 they were living in Bedford, a suburb of Halifax, with his parents and two youngest brothers - he was 20 years

older than Robert. David and his father James both died in that decade, and in 1911, Eliza was 74, and living with her youngest son James and his new wife Annie Bell - when she died in 1920, the family had moved to Rockingham, just west of Bedford.

Mary Elizabeth Redmond (1859-?) married Michael Ruder, a seaman, in Prospect in 1882, and Ellen Redmond(1861-?) married John Walsh in Shad Bay. When he died, she raised her family working in Halifax, marrying again at 52. Margaret Redmond (1864-?) married William Parr, brother of David Parr, husband of her older cousin Honora. He worked as a cooper, and later a Boston fireman, dying from TB in 1893. Sarah Redmond (1868-1898) married laborer Thomas Charleton (1872-1947), moved to Halifax and died from TB without having children. I have found only birth records for two other siblings Laura(1873-) and John William(1868-)

James Arthur Redmond (1876-1951) and his Irish wife Annie (1882-1957) lived with his mother Eliza for a while, then moved to Rockingham - he was a lumberman before marrying, then worked twenty years as a railwayman for the CNR, and they had a son James Murdock (who predeceased James, was also a brakeman for the CNR, and had a wife named Isabel) and at least two daughters Mary and Carol.

Robert Aubrey Redmond (1878-1949) married Margaret Ann McIsaac (1877-1937) from Cape Breton in 1903, lived at 42 Harvard St, Halifax, and had at least one son Joseph Aubrey and three daughters Helen, Pearl and Olive. Margaret died from pancreatitis at age 60, and Robert retired back to Herring Cove after thirty years as a railway brakeman for CNR, remarried Hilda Ruth, and lived to the age of 71. Son Joseph was also married, a railwayman, lived at 245 Agricola, Halifax, and died young from pneumonia. Helen married Alfred Tobin, a Catholic (from boy's school) from Halifax, and a poultryman for the CNR.

So, the two youngest sons were closely associated with the CNR and the railway industry in Halifax.

Now, we return to follow James' sisters, daughters of David & Mary Christian.

First, **Anne Meehan (Redmond)** (1829-?) married fisherman William

Francis Meehan (1831-?) and had 5 children, but I can't find them in the area in the censuses because of the many weird spellings of Meehan. *Mary Edith* (1854-1894) married Charles Fader, mason and plasterer and had 8 children in Halifax, including a soldier, government official and gardener. The soldier Henry Fader lived with his family in the Pavillion Barracks in the 1910s- his eldest sons were officers in World War II. *Anastasia* (1856-1922) married milk dealer and teamster driver *Henry Arthur* (1857-1917) and had four boys who all married in Halifax - the youngest, Roy, was a candy maker in his youth. Henry died in the 1917 Halifax Explosion from shock due to injuries in the explosion when a munitions ship blew up in the harbour. The sons and their children all lived their lives in Halifax, several working on the docks, but daughter *Beatrice* married Lambert *Nichols*, moved to Medford and Newton Mass. where Lambert dealt in burlap, and had six children. She was joined by her unmarried sister *Mary Edith* in 1919, and she worked as a nurse/servant for families.

Cecilia married twice, first Nelson Rupert Stone, then Thomas Roache - their daughter Maud Roache married Daniel McNeil and had ten children, according to her great granddaughter Linda Waterhouse's email. Nelson's daughter Emma died of TB as a young woman, and their son William married in Halifax.

William Francis Jr (1863-1938) had five children in Shad Bay, and all of them went to Halifax and Massachusetts for work. *David* (1865-1901) was a truckman and had four daughters in Halifax. Their daughter *Anne* also made candy with Moirs Ltd, like her first cousin Roy Arthur.

Second, **Margaret Purcell (Redmond)** (1837-1906) married fisherman James Purcil or Purcell in 1858. They lived on an island at the head of Prospect Bay, and had ten children there. All but the eldest, David, lived or married in Halifax and had their families there. David married Lillian Harrie in Terence Bay, but they had their last of five children in Halifax, and all of them stayed there. The younger children all had urban jobs - Barber, restauranter, confectionary storekeeper, teamster, telephone lineman etc.

Third, **Catherine Burke (Redmond)** (1834-bef1901) married Michael Burke (1834-1902), who operated a farm in Shad Bay near the Redmonds, and had 8 children, four or five surviving. *Michael* continued

the unfortunate family trait of drowning (see Thomas Redmond Sr and John Collier), but not until his family was grown. Patrick married Emma McGrath in East Dover in 1892, then apparently left Nova Scotia before 1901. David married Valena Coolen (grand-daughter of Mary Redmond) and stayed in the area, but lost most of their children to TB. Mary Ann married Alfred Collier, John's younger brother and had three surviving children - the fisherman who stayed in Shad Bay died of TB, and Catherine who married a truckman and Wilfred, a tram conductor, both moved their families to Halifax, and survived. Rebecca married James Arthur Coolen (grandson of Mary Redmond) - they were second cousins. They had eight sons and stayed in Shad Bay near the Redmonds.

Fourth daughter **Mary Redmond** (1850-1917+) married Thomas McGrath (1845-1917), fisherman, and they lived at McGrath's Cove and had 11 children from 1872-1892. The children joined the mass exodus from East Dover to Boston. First Lawrence married Mary Healey in Cambridge, Ma., worked in the auto manufacturing industry, and had five children, with two daughters Helen Murphy and Mary Agnes Fitzgerald having families nearby. Then daughter Rhoda married William Murphy, who then joined Lawrence in the auto business. When Rhoda's sister Hazel joined them, she started as a helper in William's auto plant, then moved to Flint, Michigan in 1930 with the Murphy family, and became a mechanic making carburetors while William worked for General Motors. They were all back in Cambridge by 1940. Finally in 1923 the last two McGrath fishermen Archibald and Eben moved to Cambridge. When Eben passed away in 1925, his wife Muriel (Noonan) stayed there to raise her family, keeping a boarding house in 1930 until she got on her feet.

David D Redmond (1842-1906) married Elizabeth Kavanagh, probably sister of older brother Thomas' wife, in 1868 in Prospect, and had 9 children. One daughter, Mary, lived her life in Shad Bay single, the other four married and had their children in Halifax -with a machinist, railwayman, grocer, and ironworker, and Lauretta&Brenton Noonan (fisherman) had their children in East Dover, but emigrated to Boston in the 1920s. One son David died as a child, a second Thomas was a labor foreman in the Harbour commission and had only daughters (5), and only eldest son John David, a fisherman, remained in Shad Bay. He had three daughters Alice Andrews, Etta Beck and Annie Stock who had

families in Halifax. Two sons remained single - Guy Walter in Halifax, and David who emigrated and worked as a trucker in Chicago.

Brenton and Laretta were cousins - he was a grandson of Mary Coolen(Redmond). His brothers George and William also emigrated to Boston and had their families nearby. George was a chauffeur, and then a railwayman, with seven children in Boston, while William was a salesman and had three kids - his two sons both serving in World War II, with Robert being laid to rest in the Bay Pines national cemetery for veterans, in Florida. His sister Muriel married Eben McGrath, who died shortly after they moved to Cambridge, Ma. in 1924, leaving her with 3 children. She ran a rooming house across the river from Harvard University and did housekeeping to support her kids - her cousin Kenneth Burke boarded with her in 1930. She lived the rest of her long life in Cambridge - living to be 86 years old.

In 1911 in Shad Bay we find few survivors of the Catholic branch from James William's two brothers Thomas and David Redmond - only Colliers related to David's fifth child Agnes, John having just died; and families of David's youngest son David D - namely John David Redmond & Ellen, and Thomas Albert Redmond & Sara, who moved to Halifax within five years. There were more survivors of the Coolen family from their sister Mary, which we turn to now.

THE COOLEN FAMILY OF MARY REDMOND (FOURTH COUSINS)

The research on the Coolen family has been done by Noella Fisher of Halifax, in her self-published "Coolens - a Family History". This consists of a two inch thick hole-punched blue binder (top shelf) and a huge roll with a hand-drawn family tree. From this book I have used the Family History taken from a Bible, with the dates of all of Mary Redmond & William Frederick Coolen's children, her account of visiting the area cemeteries, Marjorie Tremaine's description of Prospect Road at the turn of the century, the Coolen wills Noella has collected, versions of the tragic story of Thomas Redmond's drowning and the family's move to found Shad Bay, names and dates of descendants from the family tree on the inside front cover, and the following Petition for a Crown Grant of Land, which proves that the Coolen family originally came from Newfoundland

in 1762.

"Wording of Petition for a Crown Grant of Land - 500 Acres at Eastern Side of the river, at the Head of Prospect Bay, from the Salt water, to the Head of the lake in the said District by William Coolin, dated Sep 29, 1808. Recorded on Microfilm at Public Archives of N.S. mfm reel 15968

To His Excellency Sir George Prevost, Baronet, Lieutenant Governor and Commander in Chief in and over His Majesty's Province of Nova Scotia and its Dependencies,

The Petition of William Coolin, of Prospect

Most humbly sheweth,

That your petitioner was born in Newfoundland, and has resided in this Province almost from his child-hood; his father, having emigrated with his family to this Country, in the year 1762.

That your Petitioner had been employed in the Engineer's Department of the Garrison of Halifax, as will appear by the enclosed certificate, which he humbly begs leave to lay before your Excellency; and that he has always thro' life conducted himself as becometh a faithful and loyal subject.

That your Petitioner's family at present, consists of two sons and three Daughters, all grown up to the age of maturity, and as the chief part of his time and that of his son's have been employed at the fishery (a business more laborious than advantageous) he never heretofore applied for any Land.

That your Petitioner and children are now most earnestly desirous of settling on some Land they may call their own, and whereon they may immediately settle, build and improve.

Under these circumstances, your Petitioner begs leave with all due respect, humbly to hope, that your Excellency, will be pleased to take his long residence in this Province, together with his servitude, his family and the character he has alway supported; into consideration, and in your wisdom and goodness be pleased to grant him a Tract of Five hundred acres of ungranted Land at the Eastern side of the River, at the head of Prospect

Bay, from the Salt water, to the Head of the Lake in said District.

And your Petitioner in duty bound shall pray.

William Coolin

Halifax, 29th September, 1808"

The five children mentioned above were two sons John and William Frederick (who married Mary Redmond, daughter of the drowned Thomas Redmond), and three daughters Catherine Christian, Mary Peters and Elizabeth Duggan. William Coolen married Dortha Ingram in Lunenburg in 1777 - they had ten children - presumably only the above five survived to marry. Catherine married John Christian from Waterford Ireland, and their daughter Mary married our Mary's brother David Redmond. Eva Christian, a descendant of Catherine's daughter Margaret, married Keith Coolen, one of Mary Redmond's descendants, and their story is told on the Terence Bay genealogy web-site. Their family tree is recorded in Rootsweb's Family Tree RonZinck54, among others. William's parents were married in 1755 in Placentia, Newfoundland, according to Noella.

Noella concludes that two other Coolen/Coulin/Cooling families in Fox Point near Lunenburg - James and Joseph, were brothers of William, but I believe they are from the other major Coulin family that came to Lunenburg in 1752 on the Speedwell from Montbeliard. Their descendants became a large colony of Coolens in the area of Fox Point, near Lunenburg. Another account received by email to Noella states "I was very disappointed in not finding any earlier Coolen connection, but there are hundreds of Coolens in the Mill Cove area; They seem to not be well respected by the other natives there, as we usually received a sly grin suggesting the general populace seemed to think they were all in-bred idiots? And in fact the few Coolens that I spoke to knew nothing of their heritage, nor cared. One investigator told me that most of the Coulons are now Seventh Day Adventists and lead very private lives, thus appearing to be less outward and intellectual than the other natives.

As mentioned earlier in the account of our pioneer ancestor David Redmond/Redman, I believe William Coolen was a friend and co-fisherman with David and James Croucher, who was also from

Newfoundland, which explains how Mary Redmond met William's son William Frederick, and brother David met his wife Mary Christian. The land granted to William Coolen on Prospect Bay wasn't very far by sea to David's land on Redmond's Island off Prospect, and in Shad Bay.

Mary Redmond (1798?-1863+) married William Frederick Coolen in 1812 not long after her father drowned, and they had thirteen children from 1813 to 1837. Their vital stats were kept in a Coolen family record retained from the double house at Coolen's beach, Shad Bay NS by Noella Brennan Fisher's aunt Helen Coolen Mitchell.

Mary Redmond had thirteen children with William F Coolen, nine of whom survived to adult-hood. Mary inherited one quarter of her father/uncle's land grant in Shad Bay in 1846, and when she and William passed away, they left the land to all of their sons, an unusual arrangement which resulted in the land at Coolen's beach being owned by the two youngest sons William and Charles, who found sufficient funds (917 pounds) to buy out the other living brothers' shares.

At the time of their deaths their older sons were all well established elsewhere - and in particular, **James Coolen** (1815-1882), their eldest son, had acquired three properties, two near his parents on the East side and West side of Shad Bay, and one near East Dover at Leary's Cove. He had four children with his first wife Frances Symmonds (m 1837), and nine children, six surviving to adulthood, with his second wife Caroline Brunt (m 1851). In his will, he left the Symmonds property on the Bayside (west) side of Shad Bay to his four children by Frances, shared the East Dover property with all his children, and left the best property on the East side of Shad Bay to his wife, and later to his only surviving son David Peter Coolen, with shares for his two youngest unmarried daughters Frances and Charlotte.

James' grandchildren were often attracted to the cities - Halifax and Boston, but a few decided to stay in the area, and eventually comprised most of the population of East Dover, two coves over from Shad Bay.

Frances Symmonds' eldest daughter **Caroline Beck (Coolen)** married Edward Beck, a merchant in Halifax - they had two children in Halifax - Thomas who stayed in Halifax, and Caroline who married Percy Morine, a seaman on his father's ship, who had their family in Boston. He became

an accountant, and later a coke inspector. **William Coolen** (1839-1905) married a McGrath (Louisa) and had five children - Valena married David Burke and had nine children who stayed in East Dover. Harriet married William Murphy, a Boston taxi driver and union manager in 1906, and was joined by her recently widowed mother Louisa(70), sister Rose(35, housekeeper) and cousin Lenore Burke(21,worked for a candymaker), as once again the women migrate south to be together. In 1920 Rose was living with Lenore and her auto mechanic husband Albert in Boston. Lenore passed away young, leaving one son Lloyd Marshall(1920-2014).

Thomas Coolen (1842-1912) had eleven children in East Dover with Mary Agnes Duggan - those who survived had families in East Dover, except for Laurence, who moved to Halifax, and died young during a flu as the result of his heart being in atrial fibrillation (my problem). His eldest son James Arthur married Laura Shatford in 1895 and had seven children from 1897-1909, but all but his eldest Harold moved to Halifax to have families, including two sons William Everett and Foster who ran a dry cleaning business. Charity Petrie (Coolen) and Joseph lived their lives in East Dover without children, as did Anna Guilcher (Coolen) and Ephraim, with three children. Richard Joseph married Jessie Redmond's daughter Mabel Beck - Thomas was a neighbour of the Martin Beck family - and one of their sons Keith Coolen married Eva Christian, who was a great grand-daughter of Catherine Coolen, Mary Redmond's sister-in-law. His sister **Maria Coolen** (1841-1924) was single, living her life in East Dover.

In the 1990s the Nova Scotia government had a wonderful program for college students which allowed them to spend a summer interviewing long-time residents of the ocean-side fishing communities south of Halifax, and creating a community web-site for each village. The Terence Bay web-site includes the story of Keith & Eva :

<http://history.prospectcommunities.com/families/coolen/index.html>

"Eva Christian Coolen was born in 1924 in Upper Prospect, daughter of Hilton Christian and Muriel Duggan. Eva's grandparents are Nathan Duggan and Monetta Mason who grew up in Prospect. Her Grandfather Christian was the first lighthouse keeper on Betty's Island starting in 1904. She had three brothers and one sister. She attended school in the

village where the Sisters of Charity taught. Her family kept hens and pigs, and a garden. She remembers her mother in front of the stove singing to the children.

Keith Coolen was born in 1922 and brought up in East Dover. His parents are Richard Coolen and Mabel Beck. Keith's grandparents are Martin Beck and Jessie Redmond. He had three brothers and four sisters. Keith went to a one-room school in the village with between thirty-five to forty students, all being taught by one teacher. He finished grade eight and started grade nine before he left to go on the fishing boat with his father. His favourite subjects in school were English, and Geography. He didn't like Math.

Growing up, Keith weeded the garden, looked after the hens and cow, made splits for the stove to help get the fires started, and cut firewood. He remembers skating in the winter whenever possible or coasting on the hills, and playing ball in the summer. He says, "We made our own fun, fishing off the wharf, making little boats and sailing them." His first job was working on the highway, smashing rocks with a hammer. Later in Halifax he was employed digging ditches and putting cement in them for which he was paid 30 cents an hour. He also worked on an extension of the Simpson building in Halifax and at the shipyards.

Keith and Eva married in 1944. They met at a church picnic. The wedding took place in Upper Prospect and it is remembered as quite a party because afterward he was headed for the Army. He had already taken his physical and was ready to go when the shipyard he worked for refused to release him. He was considered too valuable to the yard. They raised four children, all boys.

Both Eva and Keith grew up during the Depression and learned to be frugal and to realize the value of the things they owned. Both say it was "good times." Keith says, "Before radio or television there was a lot more compatibility between neighbours and people were all pretty much in the same circumstances. Nobody was well-to-do....." They both recalled how things changed with World War II, changing for the better with fish bringing in higher prices.""

Now we mention briefly the descendants of James Coolen & his second

wife Caroline Brunt. **David Peter Coolen** (1851-1920) was his eldest son, and when James died, David's family of twelve with Emily Fader, occupied James' property on the east side of Shad Bay, after providing for his two youngest unmarried sisters Frances and Charlotte. Emily lost four of her children as babies - and she died from typhoid fever with Russell, her youngest, in 1896. The two eldest sons went west, with David passing through Vancouver and settling in Seattle in the fishing industry, while John had his family in Lethbridge, Alberta before running a grocery store in Seattle, then becoming a credit manager and repairman for the Singer Sewing Machine company. After his wife Margaret died, he moved back to Lethbridge, where he had his picture in the paper as the oldest resident of the new Blue Sky Lodge at 94, living to be 98 in 1977.

David Peter's eldest daughters Mary and Lillian married into the McMenamain family in St John, New Brunswick, and followed that family to live in Westchester county just north of New York City. Lillian married the father Thomas after his first wife died, and had step-sons almost her age, one of whom, James, married her sister Mary Priscilla. Lillian, a teacher, followed the McMenamain family across the border - settling herself in Maine while her son and Mary's family moved just north of New York city. The younger three surviving children stayed closer to home - Charles lived in Shad Bay with his father until his death, Hilda married Noah Zinck and had a family in nearby Bayside, and Burton married late and lived in Hackett's Cove.

Apparently Peter's married sisters Mary Ann McGrath (William), Elizabeth Connors (Lawrence) and Margaret Noonan (James) were well established, as they received no assistance from James' will. Margaret and James Noonan lived their lives in East Dover, but despite starting out fishermen like their father, his four sons all chose to find different lives in Massachusetts, as did their sister. Before leaving Nova Scotia, their eldest son James Brenton Noonan had his family of four in nearby Terence Bay, and two of his sons Charlie and Cyril chose to come home to have their families. Charlie's story is told on the Terence Bay web-site by his wife Joanne:

"Joanne Noonan, the widow of East Dover's Charlie Noonan, adopted the village as her home. Born in 1924 in Arlington, Massachusetts, her parents were Edmond Joseph Fitzmyris and Helen O'Connor. She met

Charlie in Boston. She was 51 when they married, and he was 62.

She told us that Charlie Noonan's family bartered fish and eggs for flour, apples and such in Lunenburg. They grew their own vegetables and had domestic animals like pigs and chickens, and they fished. His parents were James Brenton Noonan from East Dover and Loretta Redmond from Shad Bay. His grandparents were James Henry Noonan and Margaret Coolen. A Great grandfather was George Noonan who married Liza Morash.

As a youth Charlie played many different sports and also enjoyed entertaining with his father, playing together with their fiddles. He attended Ocean Glen School, a one-room schoolhouse. Charlie, an only child, was about 10 years old when his family moved to Boston. Joanne notes the strong ties between Nova Scotia and Boston. Lots of people couldn't get jobs in Nova Scotia and went to Boston for work, she recalled.

When asked about changes over the years to the village, she said, "People are not going to let this village change if they can help it.....There's a very strong community spirit here....What happens to one, happens to all."

Charlie was just 3 years old at the time of the Halifax Explosion and was living for the winter in Halifax where his father and grandfather were working at the sugar refinery. She said he told her that when the explosion hit he had just stooped down to tie his shoe getting just a little cut on his head, but his grandmother lost the sight in one eye.

Joanne is keenly interested in local history and family trees. She has albums filled with pictures and a great collection of documents relating to the area's history. She says East Dover started in the early 1800s. The oldest house is the Burke house, still standing. She has researched and found out that Charlie's ancestors came in the 1700s from Ireland to St. John's, Newfoundland at a time when the English and French were at war. The men had been conscripted into military service and desertion was a common occurrence. They were known as the Irish Brigade. She continues to research the family's history."

Elizabeth Connors (Coolen) (1855-190x) with Laurence had health

problems - both died young, as did two of their sons. Two daughters Violet and Cecilia married in Halifax, and son Michael & Clara Duggan had seven children in Halifax. **Mary Ann McGrath (Coolen)** (1853-1913) had eleven children with William in East Dover, most of whom married in Halifax. Ellen married Roy Daniel Foren (a third cousin) and stayed in East Dover. Eldest son Wilfred was a Halifax merchant who cared for his Dad in his old age - his daughter Mona Monroe (McGrath) made Pot of Gold boxes of chocolates in the Halifax Moirs candy factory - a favorite first job for many young women from rural Nova Scotia. Pot of Gold was my parents favorite box of chocolates to give each other. The Moirs factory produced over 500 types of confectionary in 190x, built by the Moirs family in the 1830s, and employed hundreds. When it closed in 2007 as Hershey moved its operations to Mexico, the employees wrote this tribute: <http://localconnections.ca/magazineblog/view/40/once-upon-a-halifax-moirs-chocolate>.

After James Coolen, the eldest surviving daughter of William Coolen and Mary Redmond was **Darcas Simmonds (Coolen)** who married John Simmonds, brother of James' first wife Fanny. The only one of their five children we could trace was the eldest son William who married Margaret Ann Beck (Martin's sister) in 1869. They raised nine children in Rockingham, NS, near Halifax and were a railway family. Most of their surviving children stayed in Halifax - Annie married grocer Edward Joyce, Catherine married William Cahoon, a steamfitter, John was a Halifax police sergeant, and Walter, single, was a CNR freight handler. James, who worked for the railway, was first in Yarmouth NS, then raised his family in Kentville NS, and youngest son Clarence was a station agent in Lloydminster where he died at only 44 from cancer and is buried in the Logan cemetery in Tofield, Alberta. Second eldest William had a romantic marriage to Jennie Lawrence in an upscale Boston hotel (Revere House on Bowdoin Square), then moved to Edmonton where he was a train dispatcher, and they had six children there.

About three younger daughters Caroline, Mary and Elizabeth, we know little about them other than what shows in the Family Record from the bible. Purcell seems to be a particularly difficult name for census takers, and Caroline and Mary married two Purcell brothers William and John from a large local family, but were never to be found in the birth marriage & death records or the census under the usual spellings.

Caroline apparently died after her second childbirth, and Mary & John seemed to disappear from the area. Elizabeth married Thomas Laidlaw, and the only interesting grandchild we could find was their unfortunate grand-daughter Grace Lynch (Hiltz) by daughter Jessie who died in the City Home poorhouse. It's hard to believe that only a hundred years ago there was still a poor house in Halifax!

And so we come to the two youngest brothers William and Charles who ended up with the habitable land that was Mary Redmond's share of the Shad Bay land - on the east shore of Shad Bay behind Cochrane's Island, and in front of what was to become well known as Coolen's beach, one of the only beaches that was capable of drawing Halifax families for a visit. There William and Charles built an enormous double house, in which they raised a total of twenty-two children, eleven each. At their peak in the 1880s, there were several dozen Redmonds, Coolens and Colliers taking up pages in George Longard's 1881 census, before the families began drifting away to Halifax and Boston.

William E Coolen (1830-1893) married Jane Drysdale (1840-1923) from the large Goodwood family, and had eleven healthy children in the big double house - almost all of whom gave up on their Dad's fisherman history and drifted away to city jobs, though many came home to Shad Bay in their old age, and the Holy Cross Catholic cemetery is full of Coolens. Their eldest, Charles (1864-1908), had five children in nearby Bayside with Ada Fader (1870-1942) - two of them were delivered by their cousin's husband Dr. Tyler, and all of them spent most of their life in Halifax.

Mary Ann went to Boston to marry Canadian carpenter and cabinet maker Thomas Ganter. They had three children in Mattapoisett, near Plymouth - one, Alice, died from diphtheria at only 4 years of age. Tragically, their only son Adrian returned to Canada to enlist in the 5th Battalion, and died in the battle of the Somme, near Courcellette, France. Margaret (Maud) married Henry Duggan and had ten children in Shad Bay - most of them moved to Halifax, as labourers, clerks, confectioners (Moirs?), railwaymen, and the rest I couldn't trace, so maybe they moved further away. All the Halifax children still regarded Shad Bay as their home, and ended up in Holy Cross cemetery.

James Arthur and Laura Coolen married two children of Catherine Burke

(Redmond), even though they were second cousins. James was known as a "Jack of all Trades" - he even ran one of the censuses - a favorite job of mine in Richmond BC. James & Rebecca Burke married in 1903 and had 6 children, including twins who died in their first year, and Rebecca who died of TB in 1916. In 1921 their youngest son Walter lived with James' mother Jane, who was 81, his younger brother Richard and his new wife Lena. The new Ancestry transcription of the 1921 census leaves something to be desired, as it is unable to find James and his other children, even though we know he lived in East Dover only two years later when he was the respondent for his mother's death registration.

Laura married Michael Burke and had six children in Shad Bay, but he was another victim of tuberculosis when only 33 years old. Her sister Mary Ellen married John Devlin from Grace Harbour, Newfoundland. He was a plumber for over fifty years - the children all married and lived in Halifax except for Jean Anna Jones (Devlin) who had her family in Barrie, Ontario. Their brother William David Coolen married Charlotte Hubley in 1907, and they raised two daughters in Northwest Arm - sister Olive married a steelworker in New Glasgow, NS

Charles Coolen (1834-1893) married Mary Elizabeth Marriott of the large Goodwood family. The two brothers Charles and William must have been very successful fishermen to have produced such large and healthy families - Charles also fathered eleven children, all living to adulthood. There wasn't room for all of them to stay, and the exodus to Halifax and Boston continued.

Mary Coolen married Philip Gough, a tanner in Halifax. Their daughter Gwendoline married mechanic Stanley Deal, son of a victualler (grocer?) and they had twelve children in Halifax, and son William married Anna Talbot and owned a grocery store in Boston. Peter Coolen was a butcher in Halifax, and married Hannah Connolly, but came upon tough times, going to jail in 1894, and became indigent, and had to take money from his mother to pay his debts. Emma married George Cornoran in Dartmouth, and probably went to the US. Caroline (Cassie) married Sim McGrath in Massachusetts where they had two children, and Helen married Dennis Christian in Medford, Mass. and had four children from 1907-1915.

Charles died fairly young, and left his Shad Bay property to his wife, and

after her death, to his four sons; *Peter* died before his mother, and *George* married Ethel Barry in Prospect, but they moved to Dorchester, Mass. before his mother died, and sold his share of the land to his two brothers. So William Harris and Charles were the two sons who raised their families in Shad Bay. *Rebecca* died single from tuberculosis, and *Bertha* married cousin Raymond *Beck* and had their family in East Dover. This is the family previously discussed with the Becks - Ruth Beck was her grand-daughter.

William Harris Coolen, a fisherman, married Elizabeth McGrath in Halifax, and returned to Shad Bay to have their four children - their youngest was Helen Mitchell (Coolen), who accompanied her cousin Noella Fisher on the cemetery tour that kicked off Noella's research resulting in "Coolens - a Family History". *Charles Terrence Coolen* married Emma Foren, a daughter of Alice Redmond, and had three daughters who remained in Shad Bay. He sold his share of his father's land to his brother William, and bought the old Dr. Tyler home just up the road, retaining his share of the family fish store.

The second daughter *Isabel* married Daniel *Brennan* and had their family in Dartmouth. One of their sons Dr. Maxwell Daniel Brennan, received his Bachelor of Medicine & Bachelor of Surgery from Edinburgh University, and practiced as a surgeon in Dartmouth. His daughter was **Noella Fisher**, who did the wonderful Coolen family history that she published herself, and mailed to me, all thirty pounds worth and a large scroll of the hand-written family tree. It was 1966 when the Mount Saint Vincent and Dalhousie University graduate was called to the bar, a career path that at the time was considered unladylike. She and one other woman were Mount Saint Vincent's first two female graduates to practise law.

She blazed the trail for women who followed - after having to be smuggled into the prestigious and male only Halifax Club many times for important meetings, she began a decade long struggle to join the club. She only succeeded in becoming the club's first female member after making many headlines, as two members left the club in protest. Her story is told online in a biographical article in the Herald magazine By COLLEEN COSGROVE Published September 11, 2013.

And so ends my story of the Catholic branch of the family - of my great

grandfather James Redmond's brothers Thomas and David Redmond and sister Mary Coolen (Redmond), with special thanks to Noella Fisher Q.C.

THE HALIFAX EXPLOSION - 6 DEC 1917

The Halifax Explosion was from a munitions ship the Mount Blanc loaded with a deadly cargo of 2300 tons of picric acid, ten tons of guncotton, 200 tons of TNT and 35 tons of benzol, which collided in the harbour with the Imo. The resulting explosion from the collision has left its mark on people even today. Destruction came from land, air and sea. The earth trembled, and the bed of the harbour was split open. Air pressure built up to such an extent that the force of the air alone was enough to demolish buildings. Then the tidal wave rose up from the water and caused more damage. Until the explosion of the first atomic bomb, this was the largest explosion in history.

The whole North End of Halifax and portions of Dartmouth were completely destroyed. Windows were shattered sixty miles away in Truro. A ship out at sea was struck by the tidal wave with such force that the ship's captain thought she had struck a mine. The Imo was pushed up on the Dartmouth shore where the 5043 ton ship remained for quite some time. All that remained of the Mont Blanc was the cannon with its barrel, bent like soft wax, which fell into Albro Lake behind Dartmouth, and an anchor shank, weighing half a ton, which fell into the woods across Northwest Arm.

The structural damage was surpassed only by the injuries caused and subsequent loss of life. There were between 1600 and 2000 people killed, another 9000 were wounded; 1800 houses were destroyed and 12,000 damaged, leaving 25,000 people homeless. Even though almost one-fifth of Halifax lay in ruins, ninety per cent of the injured were cared for on the same day. Camp Hill alone handled 1500 cases the first day, and the Victoria General hospital, Infirmary and YMCA were also flooded. Halifax Ladies' College and St. Mary's College were converted by the Americans into up-to-date hospitals run by the Military Medical Corps. The doctors on Queen Street, Dartmouth, ended up using tables, desks, and any stable furniture they could find for emergency operating tables. These tables were set up on the streets, and the doctors received most of their supplies from pharmacists in the area.

The first outside help that arrived was not one of the planned disaster relief ships or trains from Massachusetts or Maine. The help came from United States citizens through the U.S.S. Von Streuben, which was thirty miles out of Halifax when the blast occurred. The United States troop transport came into Halifax, and medical officers and nurses aboard spread out around the city and helped as much as they could.

Many people still display bluish scars over their bodies - a souvenir of the incident. These bluish scars resulted because the doctors, at the time, were mostly concerned with stitching the wounds and had neither the time nor the supplies necessary to clean the wounds properly. Other people still have pieces of glass working their way out. One grandfather found that a splinter of glass worked its way out of his head a few months ago, over fifty-seven years afterwards.

But the scars people received were not only from flying glass, but also from burns. The fires were caused by hot stoves in collapsed houses and by the pieces of red hot metal from the Mont Blanc, which erupted like a giant grenade, sending thousands of shards from its metal hull driving deep in the sea bed and into people's bodies. My grandparents believe even more lives could have been saved if everyone hadn't been ordered to flee when it was believed the magazine was going to explode. People who were trapped could have been rescued if everybody hadn't been in such a big hurry to leave.

And as if the original blast and the consequential fires weren't enough, still another hazard was added with the arrival of a terrible snow storm the next day. This hampered rescue operations, and those whose houses had been demolished spent a few nights out in the freezing temperatures. Pneumonic serum was ordered from the States in unheard of quantities.

At the time relatively few Redmond descendants lived in Halifax, and to my knowledge only one was killed - the unfortunate milkman Henry Arthur, who was out delivering bottles of milk at the time of the explosion. My Grandfather Howard's sister Ida Mae Redmond was one of the hundreds of Boston nurses who came on the relief train from Boston and Maine to help staff the hospitals. Her uncle Edward Redmond was on the Halifax county council which was in charge of helping the homeless and rebuilding the jail and mental hospital. Many of my

relatives would have felt the blast in St Margaret's Bay. One of the school-children George William Nash (whose wife Cora Boutilier is a Redmond cousin by marriage) in his eighties - described it thus:

"I can still remember that day as plain as if it were yesterday. I was sittin' in school that morning - school just got in, and I was in the front seat with Harley Williams. All the windows in that Boutilier's Point School just shook, just like a tremor in the ground. We didn't know what hit us! Then at recess time, when we were out playing, we saw big clouds of blackened smoke starting to roll up from Halifax. It wasn't until we went home that we knew what had really happened. The two Conrad boys from the Head of the Bay were both killed."

THE BISHOP FAMILY AND THIRD COUSINS

In 7 Dec 1863 my great grandparents James Redmond (Jr) and Marie Elizabeth Bishop were married by marriage bond, signed by the two fathers - James Redmond with an X, and William Bishop signing his own name. James was 24, and Marie 21. It seems likely that they had their own farm in French Village, as all of their six children were baptised in St Margaret's Bay. My grandfather Howard recalled a family story that Marie Elizabeth was a very strong-minded Protestant mother, who much resented and strongly resisted the repeated efforts of the Catholic minister in Prospect to convert her to bring up her children Catholic, like their father, and most of his family.

Sadly, they had only a short life together. They both died of tuberculosis in 1877, within two weeks of each other, first Marie on 24 Jan, then James on Feb 6. It is possible that they had been ill for some time, as they lost their youngest baby James two years before, after living only eleven days, and all of their older children lived to become adults.

Tuberculosis was all too common in St Margaret's Bay, the fishing communities on the Atlantic and Halifax itself - whenever times were not good and poor families weren't able to feed themselves adequately. There were dozens of David Redmond descendants, as well as my father's brother who died before treatments became available in the 1940s, and good times returned. Most families lost at least one child or

grandchild to this scourge, and often the victims were in the prime of their life - in their twenties, thirties or forties.

The Redmond family descendants who died from tuberculosis is a long, sad list: John Earl Redmond, Madge Burke, John Michael Redmond, William Foren, Ralph Burke, Peter Coolen, Russell Duggan, Mary Edith Meehan, Letitia Redmond (Stone), Emilia Redmond (Longard), Rebecca Coolen, David Meehan, Rebecca Burke, Michael J. Burke, Nora Parr (Redmond), as well as James and Marie Elizabeth Redmond (Bishop) in 1877, James' older sister Mary Innes (Redmond), and their daughter Elizabeth Ann and her husband George Merrill, in Boston.

My father's brother William Albert Ash couldn't come to Canada with his brother because of lung disease, and he died of tuberculosis in 1941, only 38 years old. My grandfather Howard died from asthma in 1933 - affected by the lung weakness of his parents who died in 1877 of TB - their baby James and six nephews/nieces from James' sister Mary Innes may not have died directly from TB, but were clearly impacted by their parents' tuberculosis, all dying in infancy. My lung weaknesses came from both sides of my family, and had I been born ten years earlier, I probably would have suffered the same fate.

The Kentville TB Sanatorium was the first and only facility in the Maritimes for the treatment of TB. One of Edward's sons John Earl Redmond was isolated in Kentville for many years as his wife Amanda (Deal) coped alone with their large family. In the nineteenth century TB was one of the leading causes of death in Nova Scotia, and when the Sanatorium was opened in 1904, TB was killing over a thousand Nova Scotians per year. The history of the Kentville sanatorium is described online in the Hants Journal article of Sep 10 2013 "[Taking the Cure](#)".

James and Marie Elizabeth left five children orphaned, ranging in age from four (Howard) to eleven (Ida Mae). Howard had four older sisters - Ida, Laura, Elizabeth and Maggie. Now clearly Elizabeth had no intention of leaving her babies to the Catholic church, so when she and James died, the Bishop family, which consisted of four married siblings of Marie's, decided to separate the children and move them away from St Margaret's Bay to live with their Aunts and Uncles. The match-ups were coincidentally made so each child and aunt/uncle pairing were at the same birth order - the motivation probably being because the children of

the family they were joining were closest in age to the orphan joining their family.

The consequences of this for my grandfather Howard was that he was separated from his father's family and three of his sisters, as they went to live near Boston with their Aunts Jane Hudson and Annie Grimes. Howard joined the second son Robert's family in Spryfield, near Halifax, and Ida Mae joined the family of the eldest son William in Halifax. Marie's youngest brother Joseph hadn't yet married and started his family, but he was the one who kept the Family Bible with its list of Bishop family births, marriages and deaths, and provided the cousins interested in family history who kept the Bishop family story alive.

The other consequence was that Howard was brought up Protestant, so much so that he came to hate Catholics, and had no idea that he came from an Irish Catholic family. His mother was a Presbyterian Scot, and so was his wife Katie, who he met in Sydney. He left Halifax to find work where he didn't have to rub noses with the Catholic laborers who had beaten him up in Halifax.

But, we get ahead of ourselves. Let me now describe what I have been able to find out about Marie's family - her grandfather William Bishop from Falkirk, Scotland and his wife Agnes Melville, and her father William Bishop and his mother Elizabeth Jennett and their families. When they first arrived in Halifax about 1816, the family started a business as cobblers. Grandfather William and his eldest son John worked in Halifax, and John's sons all became cobblers - and so was William Jr until he acquired a large farm near to Goodwood, a few miles south of Halifax (his occupation shown on his eldest daughter Jane's baptism).

In their retirement from shoe-making, William Sr. and his wife Agnes moved to the Annapolis valley in 1844, and became active members of the Presbyterian church in Poplar Grove, where William died in 1852. His wife Nancy moved from Poplar Grove the following year, presumably to live with members of the Melville family who were in Boston. In the Halifax directory in 1866, John and four of his sons were cobblers, with their business at 91 Agricola St in Halifax.

In 1855 William Jr died young. William froze to death trying to walk

home from Halifax in the middle of winter. His death is reported in the Morning Chronicle, Tues. Feb. 13, 1855. "Bishop, William, son of Willie Bishop of Falkirk, froze to death Sat. night or Sun. morning by a brook known as the "Pipehouse", leaving his wife Elizabeth Ann Jennett with seven children" - my great grandmother was thirteen, and her youngest brother Joseph Richard was only one.

Fortunately her neighbour Peter Toler had also lost his mate, and the two of them married and merged their farms and families. In 1893 Peter passed away, and in his will, he left the farm to his wife Elizabeth, and after her death to her youngest son Joseph Richard. My grandfather Howard Redmond was living with the middle brother Robert Bishop at the time, and Robert inherited \$120, which was a sizable sum, but much less than the value of the farm. The executors were eldest son William Bishop III, and Richard Jannet, who I am guessing is a brother or nephew of Elizabeth.

My GGrandmother Elizabeth's youngest brother **Joseph Richard** was married to Teresa Umlah, and this lucky couple inherited a piece of property, part of the Umlah Farm which was situated on the Old St. Margaret's Bay Road that is now part of Long Lake Provincial Park. In the 1860s John Umlah inherited the Long Lake grant and the Goodwood grant, 1000 acres in all, from John Wagner. Three generations of Umlahs lived in the old home with its large rooms and huge granite hearth. The Umlahs raised vegetables for the city market, cut and sold cordwood and ran a dairy farm in later years. In the 1950s the whole farm was expropriated by the Public Service Commission, the house and barns had to be demolished by the owners and the wells filled in.

John Umlah was Teresa's father, probably a grand-son of William, John Umlah Sr's eldest son and his wife Mary Anne Wagner, and he inherited this farm from the Wagner family. Mary Anne's brother, John Wagner, married William Umlach's sister Mary. They had no children and John sold his portion of the Long Lake Grant, in addition to land he had purchased, to his great nephew, John Umlah. With my grandfather Howard Redmond living with Robert Bishop in nearby Spryfield, it is highly likely that Howard would have spent some time on the Long Lake farm.

The Bishop Family Bible was carried on through Joseph and Teresa's

children and grandchildren, and passed to their son William, grandson Roy, and great grandson Jimmy, who gave Aunt Anne a copy of the Bible recorded dates in 1983. The research for this branch of the family was done by Pierre Cloutier, who married and later divorced Jimmy's younger sister Lorna, and was confirmed by obituaries and newspaper marriage notices from George Newbury. William married Daisy Moser, and his sister Jennie married Daisy's brother Russell Tremaine. The two Mosers were distantly related to our pioneer David Redmond's second wife Judith Moser - they were great great grandchildren of Judith's elder brother Samuel (per John Cordes' WFT tree in Rootsweb).

Meanwhile, my great grand-mother Marie Elizabeth's two sisters **Jane Bishop**(older) and **Mary Ann Bishop** (younger) had followed their grandmother to the Boston area, and were married there before Marie and James Redmond passed away. Jane Bishop married William Hudson, a watchman at the post office, in 1868, and they had two children Bessie and Maud soon after.

Mary Ann (Annie) married Alex Grimes, a truckman in Somerville, a suburb north of Boston, in 1873, and they had four children. Annie was a naturalized US citizen, having immigrated from Canada in 1872. For Christmas 1878, Annie and Alex gave what was to become the Bishop Bible to Annie's youngest brother Joseph Richard Bishop and his new wife Teresa. She kept it in a place of honour and duly entered the Bishop family events in it throughout her life.

My mother would have been thrilled to learn that her father Howard had a first cousin, Emily Grimes, who was a teacher at the prestigious Wellesley College, one of the top women's colleges in the US, later educating Hillary Rodham Clinton. As Alex was of modest means, being a "truckman" in Boston, it must have been Emily who provided the substantial \$12,000 home in Wellesley that she and her widowed mother Annie shared in 1930.

Emily's brother Charles owned a fish wholesaling business on Vinalhaven Island off the coast of Maine. Their brother Frank (1877-1966) worked as a foreman for the Lane-Tibby fish processing plant, the largest one in Maine, and one of the largest in the US. It was the first plant to have a cold storage facility, and it was Frank who was the foreman. In 1930 both Frank and his sister Grace Weir were divorced,

and they had joined Charles in Vinalhaven. In 1966 Emily, age 74, passed away in Maine a month after Frank's death on Vinalhaven Island - they were probably the last of Annie Bishop's kids.

Returning to the untimely deaths of my great grandparents in 1877, Howard was separated from his four sisters - Ida Mae went to Halifax to live with her eldest brother Uncle William, Howard stayed with his Uncle Robert in Spryfield (on the next road over from Goodwood leading south from Halifax), and the other three girls Laura Jane, Elizabeth Ann and Maggie Janet moved to Somerville Mass. to live with their Aunts Jane Hudson and Annie Grimes. Joseph Richard was the only Bishop sibling not inheriting a young Redmond because he hadn't yet married when Marie Elizabeth died.

Elizabeth Ann was said to have been a good artist - perhaps my brother Terry got his artistic chops from her. She married farmer George G. Merrill in 1887 in Salisbury, at the NE corner of Massachusetts. Sadly, both she and her husband died from TB - he first in 1904, and she two years later in 1906. Then their only son Percy Jewel committed suicide by gunshot in 1908, at the age of only twenty. The respondent on his death registration was Percy's Uncle A B Parker, husband of Elizabeth's sister Laura - and on Elizabeth's death registration it was her sister Ida Mae Redmond. So the sad TB story of Elizabeth's parents was repeated within her own family - perhaps Percy also had TB and couldn't bear to go through it all again.

Canadian women who moved to Boston in that period tended to marry other Canadians, but Elizabeth Ann was the exception, marrying into an old New England family, descended from Nathaniel Merrill (1601-1655), who was the pioneer of the Merrill family, now numbering over 300,000 descendants, and, like Louis Houde, having his own genealogy club for his descendants. He and his brother John came from the tiny village of Wherstead, Suffolk, three miles from Ipswich around 1635 - so they were part of the wave of Puritans who migrated to New England shortly after the arrival of the Mayflower.

The family remained in the coastal area around Newbury in what was to become the boundary between Massachusetts and New Hampshire. They briefly lived at a point of land at the mouth of the Parker river now called Cape Merrill - it was near a salt marsh. Farmers would come to cut

the salty hay and transport it up the river to their farms - it was a treat for their cattle. Their homestead lots were in the "Neck", just south of the Parker river. The original town was found to have little land good for farming, so the whole town picked up stakes and moved three miles north to the shores of the Merrimac river at Newburyport, and sought out mariners to emigrate and build up a shipping industry.

Nathaniel lived a modest and ordinary life as an early farmer, leaving only the most basic farm instruments, five acres of plowable land, and a few cattle and pigs to support his wife Susanna and his five sons, who were to become much more prosperous than he. Our George is Nathaniel's 7 times great grandson: his line from Nathaniel & Susanna is as follows:

Abel Merrill (1644-1689) = Priscilla Chase > (youngest son, cared for mother in her 2nd family Jordan)

Thomas Merrill (1679-1756) = Judith Kent > (moved few miles north to South Hampton, later in N.H.)

Eliphalet Merrill (1723-1803) = Mary Clough (grandda. of John Clough, founder of Salisbury, Mass.)

Joseph Merrill (1744-1817) = Anna Barnard (11 children, eldest son of Eliphath)

Ezekiel Merrill (1769-1792) = Anna Jewell (Eldest son, shoemaker)

Thomas Jefferson Merrill (1804-1886) = Sally Pike (shoemaker, lived next to Sally's Pike family)

Samuel Pike Merrill (1832-1899) = Mary M Feltch (shoemaker, like most of his brothers & cousins)

George G Merrill (1855-1904) = Elizabeth Ann Redmond (my grand-father Howard's sister)

The most interesting of these ancestors was Eliphalet Merrill, who was a Captain in the Colonial Army in 1767, a deacon of the Congregational Church, and a member of the Legislative Assembly from 1775-1782 - both before and after the British Governor John Wentworth left the scene. So

he would have been intimately involved in managing the colony during the violent upheavals after the Boston Tea Party, when the British navy blockaded supplies to the New Hampshire ports, and forced ships carrying tea or arms to move on to Halifax. This brought on violent protests, culminating in the seizure of a British ship in the harbour and the quick exit of the British Governor.

Eliphalet was the representative in the government for South Hampton, his home town. His eldest son Joseph (32) signed the Association test pledging loyalty to the Patriots, and prepared the list of able bodied men and the few arms they possessed that was used to determine how to raise an army, and what supplies they needed. The British didn't threaten the area of their home, but the New Hampshire Patriot army was involved in capturing Fort Ticancagua, and the unsuccessful attempt to attack Canada, and were also a large part of the force defending Rhode Island.

Eliphat's life must have been a fascinating one, to be in at the political and military transition from British rule to Patriot rule - his Legislative Assembly included three men who were to be signatories on the Declaration of Independence. It seems that he was not elected under the new state constitution, being over sixty years old at the time, but undoubtedly lived out his old age as a very respected man. The Merrill family contribution to the U.S. Civil War was more modest - George's father Samuel was a private in the New Hampshire 1st Regiment Heavy Artillery, company A (Rockingham county) which was mustered in 1863 to defend the port of Portsmouth.

The Merrill family is very well researched in New Hampshire and Newbury history books, and as well in the Family Search online book "A Merrill Memorial - An Account of the Descendants of Nathaniel Merrill, an Early settler of Newbury, Massachusetts" by Samuel Merrill. This book includes the wills of several generations of Merrills before and after emigration, including an interesting description of the lists of property they gave in their wills. Samuel says of Nathaniel that "His life may seem to us, indeed, to have been commonplace. It ended before it had reached the three-score years allotted by Scripture, but no one's life can be thought to have been in vain if he has given to the world five stalwart sons, trained to habits of industry and thrift".

Famous civil war and family historian General Lewis Merrill said of his extended family that ""The persistence of family traits in character and appearance is very striking in the Merrill stock. I have never found one of whom I was ashamed, and have known very few in whom I could not detect the facial and gestural marks of the race. They have uniformly, in my experience, been a sober-minded, honest and capable people, a little too much disposed to introspection and self-criticism, but never content to be unlearned; not enough push and 'cheek,' by which they often allow inferior men to take the places in which they belong. I think the family shows a larger proportion of well-educated men than any of the old New England stock of which I know. In all my extended correspondence with them the rarest thing is to find one who does not show in his letters that he has fair literary culture."

Returning to the Redmond sisters, Laura Jane married milk dealer George Parker in 1885, and Maggie Janet married his brother Arthur B Parker, then a teamster, in 1892. Both marriages were in Somerville, a northern suburb of Boston, and by 1900 both the brothers were in business together as milk dealers. Both brothers were born in Lakeville/Coldbrook, near Grafton in the Annapolis valley of Nova Scotia - their parents owned a farm there. George C was seven years older - born in 1864, Alexander A Bruce Parker was born in 1871.

Tragically, Laura died of tuberculosis in 1895, together with her only child Mabel, at the age of two. Maggie and Arthur carried on the milk delivery business through their two sons Howard Bruce and Otis Hudson Parker. Both sons lived in the Boston NW suburbs (Watertown&Belmont) in 1940, while Gladys was single, living with her parents at 116 Church St, Watertown, Mass. Helen Jennie, a college graduate, married John Lincoln Pearson, a mechanical engineer, and moved to Pennsylvania and then New Jersey. Howard married Isabella W Whitcom about 1925, and had one son Howard Bruce Jr who was 11 in 1940. In 1930 he was employed as an engineer, but in 1940 he owned a milk distributor company (probably inherited from his parents) and owned a \$7,000 home in an upscale neighborhood at 39 Benton Rd, Belmont, Mass (at the NW corner of suburban Boston today), near the Oakley Country Club (golf).

Younger brother Otis Hudson Parker also married (Louise S), and served in both World Wars. According to his 1942 draft card, he and Louise

lived with their only son Otis Jr. at 119 Russel Ave in Watertown Mass, and Otis worked as a milkman for the Seven Oaks Dairy in nearby Somerville. His middle name may have come from his great Uncle William J Hudson - the uncle with Aunt Jane Bishop who took in his mother Maggie Bishop after her parents died. He had an interesting life from 1839-1899 which included a stint in the US Navy on the North side - at a list of navy personnel on a US Naval Rendezvous at Boston on Jul 18 1857, he is described as 17, with blue eyes, black hair, light complexion and 5'3" tall. He died from meningitis in Boston - he was born in Roxbury, Mass to Irish born parents William A and Sarah W Hudson.

Aunt Jane Hudson (Bishop) survived her husband - in 1900 she was in the census in Boston as widowed, with no living children, so possibly Bessie and Maud, who were 12 and 10 in the 1880 census, had died. I couldn't find marriages for them in Massachusetts.

Laura Redmond was staying with her Aunt Annie Grimes in 1880 in Somerville, Massachusetts with Uncle Alex Grimes and their two young children Fred (6) and Frank (3). She was thirteen at the time, so probably enjoyed being a babysitter to her two cousins. The Grimes family was later to be joined by Grace in 1883 and Edith in 1892. Annie outlived her husband, and in 1920 we find her living with her eldest son Fred, his wife Edith, grandson Asa (27) and Annie (22), as well as Edith's mother Louisa (79). They lived in Waterville, Maine. Fred and Edith also had another daughter Jessie who probably married Clarence Cooper in 1918. Asa married Christina Donna and moved to Newport, Rhode Island, where he was a machinist making torpedos in 1940 and during the war at the famous Goat Island Torpedo station. They had two daughters Lorraine and Dorothy.

Laura's cousin Frank Grimes married Catherine Bullard in 1902 and had three daughters in Somerville - Dorothy, Marion and Ruth. His sister Grace married Otis Lesgaller, foreman in a grocery warehouse in Somerville. In 1930, Aunt Annie is living with her youngest daughter Edith in Wellesley, Massachusetts, where Edith is a children's dressmaker with her own shop. Annie Grimes (Bishop) is now almost 90.

That brings to a close (for now) the story of my grandfather Howard Redmond's three sisters and the two aunts in Boston who took them in.

Howard's eldest sister Ida Mae (from whom my mother probably got her middle name) eventually also lived in Boston, but as a child she lived with her mother's eldest brother William Bishop III in Halifax after her parents' deaths. He was able to give her a good start in life, and the opportunity to train as a nurse. In 1900 she operated a rooming house in Somerville with five boarders, and was probably just starting her nursing career. She had lost her sister Laura Parker in 1895 - and then another sister Elizabeth and her husband George Merrill, all from tuberculosis. In her rooming house she ran in 1900, she was caring for the sister of Laura's husband, as she passed away from pelvic cancer in 1901. So she had many tragedies to motivate her to become a nurse. In 1910 she was a nurse in a private home on Boston St. She remained a single lady, devoting her life to caring for others.

Ida Mae was one of the nurses who was sent on a train full of doctors, nurses and medical supplies from Boston to Halifax to assist in the care of victims of the terrible Halifax explosion. By 1930 she was caring for an elderly woman Fanny Hingham in Hingham, Ma., who was 70. She became a US citizen in 1929, possibly in order to qualify for a pension. She passed away in 1937, of cancer, I think - Jean Petersen has her death registration being recorded in Norfolk, Ma., but Find A Grave puts her grave as being in Puritan Lawn Memorial Park in Peabody, Ma., some 70 miles from Norfolk.

My grandfather's Uncle William Bishop's life has been well documented by his grand-daughter Ruth Doherty (Bishop) in "The Bishop Family" in Aunt Anne's genealogy collection (red book). I quote from her brother Roy's account of William's life. "As a young lad he came to the city and was working as an apprentice in a shoe repair shop (probably in his cousin John's shop, son of his great uncle John Bishop). It was around this time that the south end of Halifax was being built up. A contractor working here from away brought his shoes to be repaired, and he was impressed with "Will" as he was called, and upon asking him a few questions offered to take and teach him a "real" trade (stone mason). He took this opportunity and eventually became one of the prominent men in the building and monumental works in Halifax.

In the book "Gravestone Carving and Carvers in Nova Scotia" by Deborah E. Trask, P. 83 you will find the listings of both William Bishop and his son Frederick E. Bishop, giving the addresses of their various business

establishments in downtown Halifax. Among some of the contracts he worked on was as a foreman at the Armouries by the Commons, the cross on the steeple of St Mary's Cathedral, Memorial Tower (dingle), assembling the marble altar at the Sacred Heart Convent (which was brought over from Italy). He even designed the duck house for the Halifax Public Gardens and was often called upon to do the "impossible jobs".

After many years he retired from his marble business and went to work as Inspector of Public Buildings (under the Conservative government). Later when the government changed, he worked for the Liberals and upon retirement he was superannuated by them. On leaving this position he was presented with a beautiful gold handled walking cane, which I have in my possession. The inscription reads as follows: Presented to Wm Bishop by P.W.D. Staff P.O.B. 1914.

Concerning the Basilica, how well I (Roy) remember the story of the placing of the cross at the pinnacle of St. Mary's, making it the tallest free-standing granite structure in the world (Sep 6, 1874). I also remember grandpa telling about the contractors from New York who could not set the cross, and could not get the help. Somebody said to try Bishop's Marble Works, and he took his pencil and figured the number of days it would take to raise the cross. Based on this and the cost of help, and a tidy profit, Grandpa took the job.

The cross was placed on a bed of heavy timbers and raised by jack some 8 feet every day, with Grandpa going along all the way. The timbers were about 12"X12" thick and it was a tedious job. But you know Grandpa. Never say to him "that's good enough". It had to be perfect, and that of course is the reason he continued to get big contracts not only in Halifax but in the towns all around the Maritimes. You will recall he did all the sculpting on the Grafton Street Presbyterian Church. Another major project is the work on each floor of Memorial Tower at the Dingle. All the provinces are represented except Newfoundland, and his name is on the base of each."

..... Ruth's brother Roy W Bishop, the banker in the family, can tell taller tales than Robert Ripley, so you can Believe it or not! I think it is true.

Their home on 2 Windsor St was known as Windsor Cottage. Here I

(Ruth) believe they kept a cow and chickens and of course a garden. They also had six children. In later years this property was sold to the Catholic Corporation and St. Mary's College was built here. It was run by the Christian Brothers of Ireland. When the main building had a surplus of students, they would use the old homestead for the young boarders. It now contained a couple of classrooms and a dormitory. In charge of the young students was the Rev. Brother Sterling, a man of great stature and the students called the place "Sterling Castle" in honor of the brother.

The present St. Patrick's High School on the corner of Quinpool Road and Windsor St. now is situated on the original site of the old Bishop homestead.

... The above information was supplied by Ruth Bishop's husband Michael F. Doherty who was a student at Saint Mary's in the 1920's.

Ruth recalls when her grandfather William came to live with her family (his son Fred) upon his retirement: " Being a country boy at heart he must have been dreaming of the day when he could get his rake and spade and hoe and start digging in the good earth once again. He asked if he could come down to Glen Margaret and live with us. He had the little room off the kitchen, and he made himself right at home. He began making plans to improve the surroundings. His very first project was one of urgency, he was anxious to relocate our "W.C" which the original owners had built so conveniently just a stone's throw from the back door. Grandpa decided this was both unsightly and unsanitary so drew his plans with block and tackle, shovels, crow bars and all the necessary equipment including my two brothers to assist, and they began their arduous and odoriferous task.

There was little excitement for the children in a place like Glen Margaret so upon learning of the event taking place at the Bishop residence, at the crucial moment just as the transfer was taking place, the bell rang for recess time, every kid from the one room school house ... 48 ... all grades 1 to 10 came charging over the hill. It may have been their first lesson in physics as well as on plumbing. Operations proceeded under the expert eye of Grandpa and they managed to transport the thing to a more secluded spot .. up back of the garage. The little building had a new look. The roof had been trimmed down nice and neat. Two new seats were installed and Grandpa ahead of his time had invented an automatic door

closure which was comprised of an old flat iron on a piece of rope. Upon entering the door the iron would rise and close automatically behind the occupant. From that day on it was known as the "laundry".

Not wanting to be any bother, he would send his laundry to the city once a week. He wore celluloid collars which he cleaned himself. He never went without collar and tie unless the temperature was in the 100's. He made a "deal" with me (I was eleven) to wash his sox and pocket handkerchiefs once a week for the sum of twenty five cents. It was when the big nickels started circulating, and one day he gave me one of those, thinking it was a quarter. I didn't say anything, but Mum told him the next week when he made the same mistake with someone else. So he came to me and he said "Rufie you'll never make a business woman!" One day he asked me to write out my name and date of birth on a paper for him. Later on he came on my birthday with a gold watch. On the back was "To Ruth M. Bishop from Grandpa, Oct 28, 1922". He had ordered it at Johnson's Jewellers, Halifax.

Grandpa was up at 6 every morning and would be puttering around outside till eight, when he would come in for his oatmeal porridge and whatever. No matter what he had at mealtime, he ALWAYS said "That was very nice Minnie!" The only time he ever refused anything was the day Betty made the "brown betty". She was only about eight and was trying her hand at baking.

Raising chickens came second nature to grandpa. He would send away for incubator chicks, white leghorns. Five dozen he would order at one time. They were so cute and he had a big shallow box made for them. In his bedroom he had his big bureau with the marble top and it was here he kept his chickens. It wasn't long before they started hopping out of their box and onto the bureau. I remember mum going into the room saying "Grandpa Bishop, you'll have to get those "things" out of your bedroom!" They had become so attached to him that everywhere he went they were at his heels. he remodeled the old barn by taking out two sides and replacing them with all glass, so they would get the morning sun. He made a big long run for them and had fish net over the top so they couldn't "fly the coop".

In the barn he had a big supply of cracked corn, mash and bran and when they were big enough they started laying so many eggs he used to

give them to the neighbors. We had plenty of roosters too - we ate those for Sunday dinner. We had one rooster we kept whom we called "Adam". He was a real devil, and people were terrified to pass by our house - you would see them approaching carrying an empty potato bag for protection. We were ashamed to have this happen and grandpa would say "They only imagine he's cross" until one day Adam came after him. He had his neck wrung promptly and we weren't sorry. No longer did the neighbors come for our eggs now since Adam was gone. But no doubt there are still some of Adam's offspring still crowing down around the Glen!

Grandpa had a keen eye and was an excellent marksman. He has won silver cups, trophies and medals too numerous to mention. And on his big side-board at home there were beautiful things my mother used to tell us "Grandpa Bishop won that for shooting". He qualified a dozen times to shoot at Bisley tournaments. He was also the proud possessor of the Governor General's Prize, a beautiful gold pocket watch and chain, the watch was all inscribed on the back with the details and date. There was no 12 o'clock gun in Glen Margaret but we didn't need it, because his watch was always right. He didn't mind us bothering him for the time. I think he was quite proud of that watch.

He also had a steel container which was in his room. I think it was probably for keeping the hat that went with his uniform (he had the rank of Major)... a Saturday night soldier. Well, this container was filled with little medals in little velvet lined leather cases. I have kept one as a souvenir. It reads ... Presented by the Dominion of Canada Rifle Association 1868. I've seen pictures of grandpa in a group at the Citadel Hill Museum - there he is ... his chest adorned with medals like in the song "Donald, from Bras D'Or"

Grandpa was an avid gardner - he grew everything - both vegetables and flowers. He wouldn't have a weed in his garden and he had wonderful results from all his hard work. My brothers would carry water from Fraser's Lake across the road from our place (and water for the garden for him).

Grandpa was the gentleman of the Bishop family. He was a tireless worker, well preserved both mentally and physically. He was a quiet man who minded his own business, he was proud of being of Scottish

origin. He would have an adage for all occasions, his favorites I shall never forget...Wilful waste makes woeful want... A place for everything, keep everything in its place ... Early to bed and early to rise! "He was a wise old man and he always practiced what he preached!"

His son Fred carried on the Bishop's Marble Works business on 56 Argyle St making many cemetery markers in the Mount Olivet and Fairview cemeteries. His marble storage area survived the Halifax Explosion on Dec 6, 1917. When he tendered for a contract with the White Star Line after the sinking of the Titanic on April 15, 1912, he was chosen to put up the standard Titanic stones in the Jewish cemetery. When the inspector came to inspect the work, he was very pleased and Fred received a bonus from the White Star Line. Fred was also quite famous as the goalie for the Halifax Crescents hockey team in the 1890s - he was known as "Stonewall Bishop".

He had six children, including Ruth Doherty who wrote the above testimonial, Betty Morrow (Bishop), Phyllis Casey (Bishop) who wrote the charming poem To Glen Margaret ...The Old Farm ... " Little farm beside the hill, how I long to live there still, Fish for trout in yonder lake, Hear the birds when I awake, Take a swim across the Bay, All day long have fun and play, I have wished it all these years, But there's nothing left, save tears, For the time goes on and on, And my youth is almost gone, Still the beauty haunts me so, Of that village, long ago, Every stone and every tree, In my dreams I often see, How I wish I could go there, In the Spring of every year, Maybe some day when I am old, And the old farm should be sold, Oh how happy I would be, If it might be sold to me". The three sons were Fred Jr, who was overseas in the Army when his father died in 1945, and died in 1978 in a car crash, Roy who became a doctor, and moved to Toronto in his latter years, and Douglas, who married a local Seabright girl Sylvia Faxon Hubley.

And finally we come to the middle brother **Robert Bishop** who took in my grandfather Howard Redmond when he was four years old. He was married to Jane Drysdale of the large Drysdale farming family in Goodwood, and had five children - two sisters Jane and Annie were born before Howard arrived, and three Margaret, Robert and Frank were born in the following 14 years. Howard was with Robert's family in the 1881 census, and was in Sidney in 1901, but is nowhere to be found in the 1891 census - neither with Robert's family, or with Uncle William's

family and his sister Ida Mary in Halifax. He was 18, so could have been independent by then, but where was he? We know he was probably in Halifax, but his name must have been badly misspelled in that census.

Four of Robert's five children were all single and still living on his farm on the Ferguson Cove road that intersects the Prospect road to Halifax, at the time of the 1911 census - ranging in age from 21 to 36. Only his daughter Jane had married - to neighbour Arthur Kidston. Arthur's father Archibald and mother Alice (Drysdale) operated quite a famous dairy farm, supplying a lot of milk to Halifax - the Kidston Farm is now a museum and tourist attraction in Spryfield. Before he died he leased the farm to his sons John and Archibald Jr - apparently Arthur was not interested in farming. He was a carpenter (moulder) in Chester at the time of his marriage to Jane Bishop in 1901, a mechanic in Ingramport when his son Donald was born in 1905, and a foreman in the "car works" in Halifax in 1911. He and Annie had four children - Arthur Roy, Donald, Pearl and Dorothy. When Jane died from heart failure in 1928, his older brother John gave him a part of his farm, which allowed Arthur to recover well enough to re-marry in 1934.

Robert Bishop passed away in 1915 at the age of 69, from pneumonia. In his will he gave all of his daughters \$400, \$2000 to his single son Robert, and the farm to his married son Frank, on condition that he look after his mother. Frank was another of our long line of casualties to the scourge of TB, dying in 1944 from an operation attempting to drain his TB damaged lungs. Robert Jr. was a more healthy labourer, probably living on the farm with Frank and his family, and he lived to the age of 76. Their nephew Donald Kidston, of Halifax, was the respondent at the deaths of Frank, Robert, and their single sister Annie.

In addition to operating his farm, Robert Bishop Sr also served as the water works foreman who looked after the Spryfield water supply. Spryfield is right at the edge of Long Lake, where his younger brother Joseph's family had their farm. This lake was dammed and fed into the Chain Lakes which supplied the water to Halifax from 1848 until the early twentieth century, when better supplies were found west of Dartmouth. The fourteen descendants of William Umlah, including John, lost some of their land when Long Lake was raised. In 1868 when the dam was raised, John Umlah received compensation for the pipeline crossing his land, and Arthur Kidston was compensated for losing a

chunk of the Kidston farm.

Robert was involved in local politics, as mentioned in the Minutes of Council for Halifax County. The first session was in 1880 and listed Robert Bishop, in 1881, as a representative for Spryfield District 13 as a Constable. He continued to appear in that role until he became the Councillor for Spryfield, District 13, in 1887. He served that area each year as Councillor until 1893. John Umlah took over as Councillor for Spryfield in 1894. Robert Bishop was part of a standing committee for Roads and Bridges in 1889, 1890. He was on a Special Committee in 1889 on Case of James Keddy (Insane) along with the Warden and Councillor Billman. The District of Spryfield at that time was not what we call Spryfield today...it included Brookside, Prospect Road, Goodwood, Beech Hill, Harrietsfield, and part of Spryfield; but the area where Robert Bishop had his farm was District 7, Herring Cove. In 1889 Robert Bishop's name appears on two other committees...The Poor and Hospital for the Insane. Robert's address is given as Beech Hill. In 1893 Robert Bishop became Overseer of Statute Labour for Spryfield Section of Herring Cove District 7 but it was only for that one year.

MY MATERNAL GRANDPARENTS AND CAPE BRETON COUSINS

And so we come to my grandfather Howard (Richard) Redmond. I have not discovered much about his early childhood - he passed away in 1933 before any of my cousins were born, so there is little in the way of family memories. We know that he was living with Robert Bishop's family in the 1881 census, at the age of eight, and that he was out on his own ten years later. He must surely have spent time at Long Lake with his Uncle Joseph and Aunt Teresa, as it was only a few miles away from Robert's farm in Spryfield/Beech Hill. And they were close enough to Halifax (Spryfield is now part of Halifax) to have been influenced by his Uncle William, the stone mason. We don't know if he was able to visit his Bishop Aunts in Boston, or if he was close to his father's nieces and nephews in Seabright.

There is a family story that Howard worked as a labourer in the construction industry in Halifax, and that he was picked on by the mainly

Catholic construction work force there - perhaps Uncle William found him his first jobs there as a teenager. In any case, he wasn't happy with his work there, and when the boom in coal mining and the building of one of the largest steel mills in the world drew many workers to Sydney, Cape Breton, one of them was my grandfather. Howard had progressed to become a foreman, and moved to Sydney to join the construction boom in anticipation of the 1901 completion of the huge Dominion Iron & Coal foundry and its demands for large numbers of workers. The steel mill was to make steel using the iron ore mined in Bell Island, Newfoundland, and from making coke from the slack coal which was left over when the primary coal was shipped to the growing US market. When it was finished, the steel mill (DOSCO) was the largest in the British empire.

THE MCDONALD FAMILY

In the 1901 census, Howard was boarding with the family of John & Effie McDonald, four children, and three other boarders. Boarders Howard and Murray Peacock from New Brunswick were both "teamsters", which in those days meant the driver of a team of horses for hauling things - probably lumber and other construction materials and possibly clearing building lots. John and his other two boarders were carpenters. John had a sister Sophie McKay (McDonald), and nephew Duncan McKay who was a carpenter. Two younger nephews, Neil McKay and Dan McKay were also teamsters, and worked in a livery stable, looking after the horses. Duncan had two brothers and two sisters, and one of them was to become the love of Howard's life, and my grandmother, Katherine Ann McKay.

Katherine's family had suffered the loss of her father Neil McKay in 1885, and her mother Sophie was left with five children to raise on her own - Katy was only 4 years old. I have only one picture of Sophie - as was the fashion in the day, she was very serious, and looked like she was carrying the weight of the world on her shoulders, which, in fact, she probably was. In 1891 she was operating the family farm with the help of her eldest son Duncan Jr, now 16, and Neil's younger brother Roderick - they had neighbouring farms in Grand River. In 1881 Katy's grandmother

Christy was still alive at age 70, and the McKay farm was occupied by her and four of her children - Neil, his "brother" Donald, and sisters Rebecca and Christie.

The land around Grand River and Loch Lomond was one of the best farming areas in Cape Breton, and there was a thriving dairy business which supplied the coal miners working the rich coal mines to the north. However, the McKays and the MacDonalds were late to the field, arriving in the mid 1840s when most of the best land had already been granted. The McKays (Duncan & Christy MacLeod) went first to the island of Boularderie in the Bras D'Or, arriving there around 1840 with four children including Neil, and adding three more in Boularderie before moving to Grand River around 1845. The MacDonald family of John (from N. Uist) and Christy Mackenzie (from Lochcarron) came earlier around 1835 and had a larger land grant there. Donald was their eldest son, and in 1843 he married Catherine McLennan in Arichat, and had eight children - my great grandmother Sophie was the second daughter born in 1851.

As the Scots poured into Cape Breton in the Scottish Clearances period, they joined the remnants of the French Acadians who were Catholic. Arichat had for some time been the site of a Catholic parish which had initially been serviced by priests from Prince Edward Island, and was in the realm of the Catholic Bishop in Montreal. There were a few surviving pockets of Catholicism in Scotland - including Fran's ancestors from Barra and McDonalds from South Uist - but most of the Scots were Presbyterian. In Cape Breton the settlers mainly came to areas of the same religion, so Loch Lomond and Grand River built Presbyterian churches. The Protestant Scots were mainly farmers who preferred the interior, whereas the French Catholic areas were around the Atlantic coastline and at Arichat, which was at the mouth of the Grand River. Arichat was one of the few towns that had both religions, and Donald and Catherine were married in the fledgling St John's Anglican church.

Donald and Catherine's family settled in the Catholic McDonald area of Red Islands, looking west over the Bras D'Or. The Catholics had a serious problem servicing the Cape Breton settlements because all of the priests spoke only French, whereas the new settlers spoke mainly Gaelic with just a little English. It was in the first decade of the nineteenth century when the first settlers came to Red Islands and Irish Cove. However, it

was many years before the first parish church was built.

Before the parish there was a succession of priests who traveled through to hear confessions, but these priests had all the surrounding missions to look after as well. There, too, was the problem of the Scot settlers, for in the area of Red Islands, as in many other Cape Breton settlements, most of the people were Scots.

The land that Donald McDonald's family farmed was probably only good enough for subsistence farming, but it was a lovely spot, over-looking the twenty foot red cliffs on the islands of the Bras D'Or as the islands gleam red in the setting sun. The Bras D'Or interior lakes have been described as "A basin ringed by indigo hills laced with marble. Islands within a sea inside an island.". Most of his neighbours were also MacDonalds, but from the Catholic clan in neighbouring South Uist. His family's farm was up top of the hill near Loch Lomond, and that was where the family attended church. Donald and wife, his parents and two sons Alexander and Charles who died as young men, were all buried in the Loch Lomond cemetery, most of them dying in the ten years from 1881-1891. By 1891 only eldest son Norman (45) and youngest son Donald (24) remained on the farm near Loch Lomond. The children had all learned to read and write in the area school, and the sons had apparently learned to be carpenters - Norman and Donald were, and John had married and moved to Sydney, where he worked as a carpenter when his family took in my grandfather Howard Redmond before 1901.

The Donald McDonald family went to church and school in nearby Loch Lomond where the Scottish settlers were Presbyterian and Gaelic-speaking. The first settlers there, the Kenneth Chisholm family, arrived probably in 1826, taking the route overland from Pictou. It would be difficult indeed to exaggerate the hardships faced by our forefathers in making a home for themselves in the Wilds of Cape Breton. An almost unbroken wall of forest stretched from the thin settlement along the Irish Cove-Hay Cove line to the chain of lakes that was to be the centre of the community. Enough of this had to be felled to provide space for the log houses, which were to shelter them for the second winter, and for the crops of potatoes and oats that were to be planted among the stumps. Then almost every article of clothing, household furniture, equipment, building material, and even the very tools with which they had to work,

had to be found or devised by themselves.

These expatriate Scots showed an amazing degree of skill in adapting themselves to life in the woods, learning to make spoons, ladles, bowls, furniture, farm implements, articles of clothing including even shoes from animal products, and medicines, tonics, salves and poultices from herbs and bark. They were also cut off from the kindly social communications that they were used to in the old country where they lived so close together that neighbors saw each other almost daily, where evening gatherings of song and story were prized and frequent; and cut off too from religious services, a deprivation which they felt keenly, especially on the Sundays which were their only respite from constant toil.

The grandfathers and grandmothers of the present generations of Grand River came from Lochalsh in Rosshire, a few of them as early as 1813, and the majority of them between 1820 and 1830. When the Rev. John McLennan came to Cape Breton in 1827, Grand River was the first place he visited in his round of the different Presbyterian settlements. He found forty-three Scottish families on the Grand River at that time. In his report of that visit to the Colonial Committee, he says that with the exception of one other, he was the first minister of the gospel that ever came to this place.

At the time the Lochs were in the middle of a forest, and there was a Falls on the Grand River, and a portage route from Sydney through the interior lakes, but to get their produce to market it was necessary to build a road to the West to the Bras D'Or. One obstinate Catholic there named MacKenzie made lives miserable by charging a toll to cross his land. Before the bulk of the late settlers arrived with the McKays in the 1840s, Loch Lomond built a school in 1835 and a plain rectangular church in 1838. Even when no ordained minister came to minister to the lonely settlers, families would worship morning and evening - in Gaelic.

Most of the early settlers, including Donald's father John, were granted land along the Grand River or on the eastern shores of Loch Lomond, but when Donald struck out on his own, he chose a farm with the beautiful view of Loch Lomond in the rolling hills to the west of Loch Lomond, beyond the marshy area. All of his sons could read and write, so probably attended the new school near Munroe Lake. The area must be

quite windy, as today there is a large wind farm in the vicinity. They would have had a rocky start, as in 1845-1851 Cape Breton was affected by the great potato famine, which brought the period of waves of Scottish settlers to an end. However, it seems that they survived this, and were eventually able to feed their large and growing family of eight, with the help of their six sons and two daughters, including my great grandmother Sophie.

Most of the McDonald family are buried in the cemetery at Loch Lomond, and the gravestones tell the sad story of the 1880s, when first they lost their fourth son 24 year old Alexander in 1881, then first Donald (1883) and then Catherine (1887) died and finally their second youngest son Charles passed away in 1889 at the age of only 26. It was a very sad decade for Sophie, as her husband Neil McKay died in 1885, leaving her with five young children. In 1891 we find Sophie and her children farming next to her two surviving brothers Norman (45) and Donald (24) on the original farm of their parents. My grandmother Katy was only about five when her father died, and three and seven when her maternal grandparents passed away - she would have been cared for by her mother and her many uncles.

Forestry became a major occupation as the settlers cleared the trees for their farms, and a sawmill was established north of Morrison Lake to provide building material. Perhaps it was the proximity of this mill which attracted the McDonald brothers into carpentry - Norman and Donald Jr were carpenters in 1891 when living on the farm, and John had married Effie Campbell from Baddeck in 1885 and begun his family of five in Sydney during the building boom, when being a qualified carpenter would be prosperous. William was the son who wanted to be a farmer - he too married an Effie - (McAskill) before 1885, and had struck out into his own farm not far from his father's farm in Red Islands. By 1901 William and Effie had seven children, and were farming in Framboise, Effie's home town.

There is no sign of Sophie's younger brothers Norman and Donald Jr after 1891 - perhaps they suffered the same fate as Charles and Alexander. So at some point Sophie took her young family to Sydney, probably with the help of her brother John, whose family had a large home and was taking in single men, probably known to them from John's work. Effie also chose to run a large rooming house by 1901 - it was one

of the most practical ways for widows to earn a living at the turn of the century. She had five boarders, all carpenters like her eldest son Duncan; younger brothers Neil and Dan who were teamsters like Howard; and the whole family was Gaelic speaking. Interestingly, young Katy's best friend was also an Effie - Effie Dodge, who also ran a rooming house by 1911. And so the stage was set for Katy to meet her true love Howard Redmond who was living in John's home, working as a teamster (hauling using a team of horses). Perhaps Howard was working with Katy's two younger brothers Neil and Dan McKay.

THE MCKAY FAMILY

Before we follow the marriages of Katy and her sister Annie, let us go back and trace the history of the McKay family of Sophie's husband Neil McKay and his siblings, back to the arrival of their parents Duncan McKay and Christy McLeod from Pabbay and the Boularderie, when they took up land in Grand River just as the potato famine was starting. Neil was born around 1836 before the family left Pabbay, as were his two sisters Rachel and Mary and brother Gregory. Settling in Boularderie about 1840, Duncan and Christy added three more children Christie, Roderick and Angus, before moving to Grand River about 1848-50.

It was about this time that the family secret was born - in the form of a new baby Donald John McKay. Everyone was told that he was the youngest baby brother - which was quite believable, as Christy was in her early forties, but in fact, he was the child of Neil's eldest sister Rachel, who was only about fifteen years old. Sadly, Rachel was never to marry or have other children, but Donald made up for it by living a very interesting and very long life. My cousin Ross McKay is Donald's great grand-son, and tells the interesting story of his mother being asked who Grampa Donald's father was, and her mother whispering the answer in the friend's ear so Ross couldn't hear, and the family secret was kept.

Donald's gravestone in Grand River cemetery is a grand monument proudly stating that he lived to the age of 102, passing away in May 1949. As cousin Ross McKay observes, however, it seems that he became much older as he aged. In Oct 10 1945, Grandma Katy was applying to collect a pension, and asked Uncle Donald to attest to her birth date. He said "I am

the Uncle of Katherine Ann MacKay (Redmond) and as I am ninety eight years of age with all my faculties intact I can distinctly remember her birth as June 15, 1878". Well, when he was younger his ages on the censuses and his marriage registration all agree he was born around 1852-3 - I guess he thought he was about five years older than he really was. It seems he aged my grandmother Katy too, as she was born in 1880.

Well, the secret was well kept - perhaps even within the family. On his death registration the respondent Archie McKay, son of Katy's eldest brother Duncan McKay, described himself as Donald's nephew when he was actually a first cousin. On the 1871 and 1881 censuses when he was living with Rachel's brother Roderick, he was put down as Roderick's brother. He was farming Duncan's land and looking after his supposed mother Christy with Roderick after Duncan had passed away. The family was Gaelic, and it is quite possible that Donald spoke it all of his lengthy life. When it came time for him to marry, there was only one Gaelic speaking church in North America, and that was in Boston.

So at the age of about 36, he and his sweetheart Maggie Morrison, both born and living in Grand River, travelled to Boston to get married at the Needham Gaelic Church at 1458 Great Plain Ave in Needham, Massachusetts, a suburb of Boston. The church had just been established the year before, and had been born using two recent graduates of the Pine Hill College in Halifax. They were married by Rev. Samuel Cameron Gunn, the first fully qualified minister, who came from Pictou in Nova Scotia in 1888. Apparently Donald did know who his mother was - as on his marriage registration he gave his parents as Duncan and Rachel McKay - probably giving his grandfather's name because he hadn't been told his real father's name. The Needham Presbyterian church still exists today, and has kept Gaelic alive through its Gaelic choir. Leona Imrie founded the Gaelic choir and directed it for forty years - she lived until 2009 and the age of 96.

They had fifty years together, with Maggie living until 1938. They acquired their own farm in Grand River, and raised their five children there. Their son Daniel (1894-1914) died young, and their two daughters Julie Mary Page (McKay) and Mary Rachel MacAskill (McKay) moved to the Boston area to marry and have their families. *Julie* married chauffeur Clinton *Page*, whose Page family and several of the wives'

families can be traced back to English pioneers to the Boston area in the 1630s - John Page (1586-1677) arrived in 1630, his son was one of the first children born in Massachusetts, his great grandchild Nathaniel is said to have been the Cornet who carried the Bedford flag into battle at Concord in the Revolutionary War, after being awakened by Paul Revere. The flag was carried by Page male cornets for two generations before.

Mary Rachel had the misfortune of having her first husband Duncan John MacKay, also from Grand River, die in Boston the day after their marriage. Their eldest daughter Christene married in Grand River, but had no children. It was left to their eldest son Archie to marry Dora Kemp in 1925 and have Ross McKay's mother Frances Kemp MacKay. She married carpenter and fish warden George MacKay in 1954, and their son Ross was born and raised in Grand River, and married Jemma Arab in Halifax in 1980. Subsequently he became very active in genealogy in GANS, documenting the cemeteries in Grand River and Loch Lomond and transcribing the censuses for the area, and did the wonderful research on the McKay and Redmond families which attracted me to the hobby of tracing family history. He and Jemma adopted a Russian boy Sergei Kemp McKay in 1997. Ross has a brother Stewart and many first cousins in Sydney and Grand River. He is my third cousin once removed, and my family expert genealogist.

Their family and most of the McKays and McDonalds were Gaelic speaking. The Gaelic language and culture of these early settlers is commonly referred to as Nova Scotia Gaelic and is part of daily living in the province. Fiddle and pipe music and Gaelic song provide a rich musical experience. Dance, storytelling, local history and customs are part of community living. The famous "kitchen party", often referred to as a "céilidh" ("a visit") is a common occurrence and is a great way to share language, song, music, dance and story. Recently there was outrage when the province tried to add the "Royal" designation to Cape Breton's Gaelic College, recalling that most Scottish immigrants came to Cape Breton as a result of the widespread slaughter of Gaelic Highlanders by the English king after Culloden.

When my great grandfather Neil McKay married Sophie McDonald and got their own farm in Grand River in 1875, they had five children before Neil's early death in 1885. My grandmother Katy came from a long line of strong healthy women - all of her female ancestors outliving their

husbands and continuing to farm and raise their families. Sophie moved back to her parents farm in Red Islands after Neil's untimely death and farmed the land there until her children were grown - then ran a rooming house in Sydney. Her mother Christy lived to be seventy seven, running the farm with her sons Norman and teenager Donald Jr. Neil's mother, also Christy, outlived her husband by most of twenty years, running the McKay farm with her youngest son Roderick and daughters Rachel and Christy Jr.

MY GRANDMOTHER KATY MCKAY'S FAMILY IN CAPE BRETON

And so we come back to Sydney in 1901, where my grandparents Katy McDonald and Howard Redmond have met through Howard's work with Katy's brothers in carpentry and hauling with teams of horses. They all are only a few blocks apart in the heart of Sydney between the Hardwood Hill cemetery on the hill and the Sydney harbour. Sophie had moved her family to 225 Kings Rd, where she had taken in five boarders. Howard lived with Sophie's brother John McDonald, his wife Effie, their five children, and four boarders - two carpenters and two teamsters, one of them my grandfather Howard.

Howard and Katy's whirlwind romance culminated in a June wedding - Jun 26 1902, by license, by Rev. J.G. Simpson of the Sydney Presbyterian Church. It was witnessed by Katy's older brother Duncan McKay and a friend Jessie Munro. She was a milliner living in Sydney with her widowed mother - her brother Dan was a policeman. Howard was now a contractor - his father James was shown as a sailor, and Katy's father Neil a farmer.

Their first baby arrived on 8 May 1903 - Charles Robert Redmond, my uncle Charlie. He was probably named after his Uncle Charles McDonald, as he passed away in 1889 when Katy was nine years old. The second name Robert may have been in honour of Howard's uncle Robert Bishop who raised him in Goodwood NS. His birth wasn't registered until 1948, when Charlie would have needed a birth certificate. At the time of Charlie's birth Howard was a drayman (transport by horse and buggy), and a contractor - ie, his own boss. When Katy registered his birth in Islay in 1948, she signed her name Mrs K.A. Redmond, and stated that Dr

Brookman (by then dead) attended Charles' birth.

Charlie was to live a long and healthy life, but Katy's second child Sophia Maple was not so lucky. She lived only five months - born 27 Oct 1904, and was buried in Hardwood Hill 14 Mar 1905 [Range D, Div 9, Lot 43]. This was not to be the last baby that Katy lost too soon - she later had twins Pearl and Earl in Edmonton who didn't survive. Later both her daughter Elizabeth and Charlie's wife Olive were also to lose babies at birth or at a very young age. But the young family recovered from this sad loss, and on 21 Sep 1906, Annie Sophie Redmond came into this world, and so they were able to name a healthy baby after Katy's sister and her valiant mother.

Katy was in Sydney to attend the marriages of her two older siblings. Her sister Annie married Kenneth MacKenzie on 21 December 1904, by license and Presbyterian minister Rev J.J. Forbes - the witnesses were John MacKenzie (George's brother) and Cassie McDonald (Annie's niece). By 1911 they had four children, one (Isabella) having died in infancy. They lived at 118 Argyle St (a few blocks from Sophie). Kenneth, like his father George, worked with horses - as a teamster when he married, and as a liveryman in 1911. The children were Alexis (5) (named after his mother), Neil (4) and George (1), who was to become the father of my second cousin Heather Hollett (Mackenzie), the only one of my many MacKenzie cousins living in Nova Scotia who I have enjoyed meeting. The Mackenzies were later to add three more (Dan, Sandy and Sophie), and between the seven children, they have so far to my knowledge (or more accurately, to Ross McKay's knowledge) had eleven grandchildren and three great great grandchildren, and counting, almost all of them still living in Halifax. Kenneth had six siblings and many cousins, including Arabella Ormond (MacKenzie) who married John and moved to New Jersey, where he became a greenskeeper on a private golf course; and Kenneth Livingstone who had his family in Winnipeg, and passed away in Nanaimo, BC. The other cousins remained in Nova Scotia.

Heather is my second cousin - her paternal grandmother Annie was the sister of my maternal grandmother Katy. Her father George Mackenzie was Annie's fourth child, as my mother Betty was Katy's fourth child (one was stillborn). She has two remaining living cousins - Lloyd Mackenzie of Sydney Nova Scotia, and Gordie Reynolds of Mira, near Sydney, from her father's younger brother Sandy and her youngest sister Sophie.

Lloyd seems the most interested in genealogy – he sent along Heather’s ancestor printout, which came mainly from Ross McKay’s information. They would all have Sophie McKay of Sydney (the only first cousin of my mother’s that I have met) as first cousins once removed (ie she was their father’s first cousin from Annie and Katy’s oldest brother Duncan).

Heather is married to Ted Hollett, whose family came from Newfoundland. He is a retired school principal, and Heather was a teacher – he retired early at age 53. He is tall and white-haired, about my age, and Heather is shorter, about 5’3”, and slender. They celebrated their 50th wedding anniversary on August 17 2013, with a big family get-together, planning a shin-dig like the one Fran put on for me on my 70th birthday – with a major family picture and group pictures of her childrens’ families. They went to St Pierre & Miquelon for their honeymoon, back when it was a picturesque little village. They got there on a tiny four-seater plane from Sydney, with barely room for them, the pilot, and the pilot’s wife. Nowadays they recommend going via Newfoundland, as the main air service to St Pierre is from western Newfoundland.

They have two children and three grandchildren – Janice (Edward) Whebby, who live in Halifax with their two tall grandchildren Nicholas and Christopher, age 19 and 16, both basketball players in school. Their son Geoffrey is in CSIS (a Spy, I take it), who has been to many places, including Serbia. Interestingly, he has won several medals, but is not allowed to share with his parents why he won them! He was in Ottawa with his family for a couple of years, but has recently heard he will be transferred back to Nova Scotia.

Katy’s eldest brother Duncan McKay married Euphemia (Effie) McDonald (not closely related to Sophie) in Sydney on Dec 12, 1905. They had one daughter - Sophie Peters (McKay), and lived on 241 Bentinck St, Sydney for the rest of Duncan's life (1871-1940). Duncan was also a carpenter, running his own business for 37 years. Sophie (1908-2000) lived her whole life in Sydney as well, marrying Ralph Peters in 1935. They had two children Joyce Courtney and Carol, and an infant who died - Joyce lived in Langley, BC.

Howard had been adventurous enough to move to Sydney, when Halifax was suffering from a long Canadian recession, to find work, and he had

found something he loved doing - looking after horses and sitting behind the big horses as they hauled materials around Sydney in support of the housing building boom of the beginning of the new century. So when the intensive advertising campaign to settle the newly formed province of Alberta came to Sydney, the idea of starting fresh in a land of opportunity greatly tempted him. So when the CNR opened its passenger service to Alberta in 1906 he set off for Edmonton, acquired some new horses, and resumed his teamster career, getting established before he sent for his young family.

It was very difficult for Katy to leave her family and friends, and particularly her mother Sophie who was enjoying her first grandchildren. She stayed behind with her mother to have her baby Annie in September, then set off on the long journey by train, nursing a new-born on the hard wooden slats of the CNR train. Katy was grateful to the two nuns who helped her to survive the long train trip and care for her two young children. And so began her life in Alberta, and the arrival of my mother in 1908. And eighty years later, Charlie, Anne and Bessie were still going strong - I watch them daily, thanks to the wonderful photo my wife took of them the last time they were together in Vancouver.

Katy had a very good friend in Edmonton named Effie Dodge, who followed her to Edmonton before 1911. They may have known each other in Sydney, as Effie married Harry Dodge in 1907, and they both lived in Sydney at the same time. Harry was more Katy's age, and he too was a carpenter. If they knew each other, it may have been Katy who suggested that they move to Edmonton. Katy had left too early to be at their wedding, and Effie arrived in Edmonton too late to witness my mother's birth, but she was definitely there for my birth in Edmonton in 1942, having been entrusted by Katy with my mother, when she first moved away from home, to Effie's boarding house in Edmonton. It was a great pleasure of mine to have met her when she was 94 - but sadly, I was too young and naive to think of asking her a lot of questions about her life and that of my grandmother.

After Katy moved out west, her mother Sophie lived a long life in Sydney near the rest of her family. She had most of her family within a couple of blocks of her in Sydney. Her brother John was the first to move there, and by 1911 another brother William had given up farming in Framboise to join her in Sydney, possibly at 29 Brookland St, Sydney where his wife

Effie passed away in 1935. Her daughter Annie's family lived nearby at 118 Argyle St, and her son Duncan's family at 231 Bentinck St- in her later years she lived with Duncan, passing away in 1924. She was buried in Loch Lomond with her husband Neil, according to Ross McKay.

Her two youngest sons Dan and Neil continued their love of horses, and both married in nearby Marion Bridge in 1920, so Sophie lived to see all of her children settled in marriage. Dan married Sarah Matheson, and had one child Mary Sophia in 1921. Sadly, they divorced soon after, possibly after moving to the Boston area where Sarah died in Needham Mass. in 1971 at the age of 81. Their daughter married Stewart MacDonald in Boston in 1945 and had three children. Dan moved to Alberta when my grandmother Katy lost her husband in 1931, and helped Katy keep the farm going. He eventually had his own farm, and passed away in 1951 in Edmonton.

Neil married Sara MacKeigan, and also moved to Boston, where they had five children, fourteen grandchildren and eleven great grandchildren (and counting). Their family is buried in the Puritan Lawn Memorial Park in Peabody, Mass., their Find A Grave entry includes pictures of each member of the family and of their gravestones, and is actively maintained by Thomas W Frank and his Mom.

<http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=126286109>

In the same year as Sophie's two youngest sons married in Marion Bridge, her nephew Dan, son of brother John, married Mary Catherine McKiegan, sister of Neil McKay's wife Sara. Dan became a manager of the Harris Abatoir, a predecessor of Canada Packers. He and his company benefitted from World War I, as they were one of the premier suppliers of frozen sides of beef destined to feed the Allied soldiers. In 1920 he would have been involved in the battle between the dairy farmers and the oleomargarine makers - Harris supplied a goodly portion of the margarine product in the Maritimes. It was marketed as "churned every day", and a "wholesome article of food, safer than butter, which comes from herds which may be tuberculous and which have not been pasteurized". The dairy industry fought back - the Farmer's Advocate claimed margarine was made from "filthy and inferior oils" - and Harris was forbidden to use the term "butter", or to colour the margarine to

look like butter.

Well, I really didn't want to end this book with a story about an abattoir - so I took to Ancestry to check out the last brother William McDonald of my McDonald great grandmother Sophie. His youngest daughter Jessie had married John Bannerman in Sydney in 1921, and their son "Bill" was a salesman who spent most of his career with Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company, for many years the company's regional manager for Atlantic Canada, based in Moncton, NB. And there in the tree was their son Gary, and I said to myself, I know a Gary Bannerman, I wonder if it's him? He was a well-known radio talk show host at CKNW in Vancouver in the 1970s - he was really an in-your-face guy, so people either loved him or hated him - I was in the latter group. But he was my third cousin!

So I Googled him, and he is famous enough to have a "Wiki"

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gary_Bannerman

where I read that "His father's ancestry dated back to the first Scots settlers of Nova Scotia, immigrants from northernmost Sutherland who landed in Pictou County in 1773 aboard The Hector". Well, I got excited - maybe I can prove that my GGGrandmother Catherine McLennan's parents were on the famous Hector, the first ship to bring Scots to Nova Scotia. It turns out that Gary's pioneer ancestor Donald B Bannerman was the one from northernmost Sutherland, but he came to Canada in the 1830-40s like my pioneer McDonalds, some 50 years after the Hector. Well, maybe it is a mixed up family story - My grandmother's grandmother Catherine McLennan was an ancestor of Gary Bannerman too, and there are two McLennans on the Hector passenger list, so maybe?...

Sigh - there will never be a last family history story, or a last "brick wall" ... but I have decided that this will be the last one in my book!

EPILOGUE - THE JOYS OF GENEALOGY

There is a T-shirt for genealogists that reads "Genealogist - I'd like you better if you were dead", and that describes the kind of hobby I have pursued. I enjoy the chase, the on-line research, finding little interesting gems and others who share my passion. Many people who pursue genealogy as a hobby are most interested in finding living cousins with whom to share their stories and pictures. But I have always been a bit shy to approach strangers, and looking for cousins can lead to many frustrating encounters with the great mass of humanity who have absolutely no interest in family history research, and either treat you like some unwelcome telemarketer, or simply don't answer the phone or letter (I have never succeeded in getting any English person in Great Britain to actually answer my phone calls!)

I have always been interested in history and geography, and have found many interesting things where history touched my family. It is much more fun than the stamp collecting hobby of my teen years. I am grateful to my Aunt Anne for her many communications with our Nova Scotia relatives - McKays, Bishops, McKenzies of Cape Breton and St Margaret's Bay, and for her encouragement of cousin Ross McKay, our family's first family researcher, to extend his family tree to include several generations of Redmonds - and I treasure her little red book of family history.

And I must also thank my wife Fran and her sister Mary for the joy and enthusiasm they brought to researching their McKinnons from Barra, and the long histories of the Houles and Gamaches from early French Canada. Enjoying my guilty pleasure of reading their back and forth emails in which they took the character of long-ago nasty relatives was what really turned me on to this hobby (before they discovered texting). And when they went back to Cape Breton to meet their older relatives, they seemed to be having so much fun!

I must also give credit to my favorite cousins in Alberta, who showed me how wonderful a community of cousins can be - we have been exchanging Christmas letters now for over thirty years. Lynda Moses

(Ron), Sharon Bilben (Larry), Jean Petersen (Gary) and Howard Redmond (Pam) have all shared their lives with me and helped me through my ups and downs. They are all interested in family history - we are still hoping to get together one last time for a Redmond reunion. Recently it was fun to discover from them what my mother's early life in Alberta was like. As in too many families, my parents didn't often talk about their childhoods - and so it was a joy to me to discover so much about them after they had passed away.

I was particularly amazed by the Barnardo's orphanages who brought my father to Canada. From one letter of inquiry they sent me a large envelope of treasures - all his report cards, letters, pictures - my father had such an interesting life, and I would never have known that without archives like Barnardo's. The first time I realized how much information was online was when I Googled Ash and his home town Willoughby, and found the 1841 census for Willoughby, painstakingly transcribed online by the Australian Wendy Boland who had sent away for it. It was so much fun to join "Find Your Past" and spend a few years expanding my English and Irish family trees using English censuses, birth death and marriage indexes and simply Googling genealogy name place birth date and history place. It was so interesting to copy all of the censuses for a family branch, then try to find the registrations that would link them all together into a family story (see Census word documents in My Family).

I am grateful to the Mormon church for collecting church records from around the world on microfilm, and making their rich collections available either by renting microfilms, visiting Salt Lake City, or recently online, as they try to create one giant family tree from all of the many they have collected over the years. My one visit to the Family History Library with my friends at the BC Genealogy Society was interesting, if exhausting. The "French Group" meets at the Surrey Draycott library once a month, and it is so much fun as we share every little triumph of anyone in the group, and offer joyful encouragement, and a reason to find something special to share with them.

I was lucky that my Redmond family came from Nova Scotia, as their government has really supported our hobby - making available online their extensive collection of birth, marriage and death registrations. Together with the Archives Canada census collections from 1871, 1881 and 1891, the Automated Genealogy census collections from 1901 and

1911, online transcriptions of the early censuses in 1791 and 1827, the Halifax county cemetery lists collected by George Newbury and donated to Rootsweb, and the early Protestant church records of Lunenburg county collected by Don Shankel, there is a wealth of online resources available for piecing together remote branches of your family. They also funded community family history websites by offering summer jobs to young people to interview the old families and document the early histories of villages up and down the coast - for example, the wonderful site about Prospect NS (just Google genealogy prospect ns).

So there is a lot of challenge and mystery to expanding your family tree from the records available from the mid 1700s in England, Ontario and Nova Scotia. But it is in Quebec where I have found the most pleasure over the years. I have collected over ten thousand descendants of Fran's pioneer ancestor Louis Houde and five thousand from Nicolas Gamache. They both arrived in Quebec from France in the early 1600s. The Catholic church has kept baptismal, marriage and burial records all the way back to the founding of Quebec, and they have all been made available free online by Family Search (the Mormons) and in massive books and online databases of the PRDH at University of Montreal, which collected all records up to 1800 in a research project in the late 1800s.

It was like a bonanza of data in complicated databases - a challenge which was so much like what I did at BC Tel before retirement, that it made for a wonderful replacement for my work after I retired. I started with Louis Houde's children, scoured the Rootsweb World Family Tree, finding all the people who had researched any of them. By laboriously proceeding down the families from eldest to youngest child, I could find their marriages and children - until going down to the last children born before 1800 I assembled over ten thousand descendants in a giant tree, laboriously copying the data into my Houde family tree with the My Heritage software I had chosen for its efficient data entry process. Then I joined the PRDH, and by cleverly combining their various search methods, used the 500 accesses I paid for to add another three thousand people, while confirming the accuracy of the dates collected from the World Family Tree.

Then I exported the Houde descendants to an EXCEL spread-sheet, sorted it by parish and date, and developed lists for all the parishes that had served at least 25 Houde descendants. Finally, it was online through

Family Search to the Quebec parish register, which of course, were in French. Fortunately in high school French I had learned to count in French, and it didn't take long to learn all the French words used in the standard baptismal and marriage records. The only difficulty I had was in skipping through the register in date order, as the priests didn't use numerical dates, laboriously spelling out the dates in words. Between the bad handwriting of many of the priests, and the poor quality of some of the microfilms, it was sometimes a challenge to find the next descendant in the register. So now over 80% of my Houde descendant records have accurate sources, as required by the professionals, and over 60% of the Gamache descendants.

Most people start out by researching their father's line because of the common surname, or maybe their maternal grandfather's line because of their mother's maiden name. But I have really enjoyed following the ancestors of all of the strong women in our family - the Farrells, Olorenshaws, Marlows, and Bromwicks in my direct British lines, the Olorenshaws and Watsons in the Ash first wives, the Warrens, Letts, Howkins, Dodds, Tomkins lines through our daughters and wives. In Canada, the Redmond line has been touched by Umlahs, Boutilliers, Bishops and McKays, and there are endless things to research in the future - in-laws, aunts, great aunts etc.

Well, when I started out I thought that it wouldn't be interesting to find my family because I knew that they were modest folks who were farmers or fishermen. And largely, my research confirmed my original impression. However our pioneers lived through a lot of interesting history, and I found myself and my health weaknesses throughout the family tree - I would never have survived to become an adult if I had lived only a generation or two earlier. I have always been anti-war, so it was gratifying to me to see how few of my family were of the warrior persuasion. I had to work hard to find a couple of murderers distantly related, a suicide and many TB deaths - on the whole ours was a pretty peaceful, and hopefully happy bunch.

Genealogists who have read parts of my book will be disappointed that there aren't many dates and references, but I have chosen to omit many of these details to hopefully make the story a little more interesting. But that does not mean that I have not duly recorded all of the genealogical details. My son Tim maintains my web-site at <http://www.tim->

ash.com/genealogy/index.php . This site contains my family tree ASH, as well as my collection of Louis Houde descendants, and Nicolas Gamache descendants. I have also contributed these trees to Rootsweb, and plan to contribute also to My Heritage, Family Tree at Family Search, and Ancestry at some point, and perhaps I will add my wife's family and some of the families of my cousins and children's spouses. There are also pictures of all significant vital statistics documents and a few ancestors.

So, if you are disappointed at not finding more living cousins, have a look at the website - I have chosen not to contact the cousins that have never contacted me, but you may find their names, dates and locations that would allow you to find them , if that is your wish. I would, however, like to briefly list all of the cousins that have contributed to my family story:

- Ruth Beck, the first cousin to ever get excited at finding my website, where she discovered she was related to Redmonds Colliers and Coolens among her school friends. She grew up in Shad Bay and East Dover and sent me her childhood impressions, and took pictures for me on her summer visits home from her teaching job in Ontario
- Tim Boddington, Boddington expert who helped me in my unsuccessful effort to link my GGGrandfather James Ash to the butcher Edward Boddington who raised James' second wife in Willoughby
- Evelyn Bromwich who found me the death bed confession of murderer James Brumage;
- Margie Buchholtz from Auburn, Washington, who is from the Liscomb branch of the Umlahs, and filled me in on that branch from Margaret Redmond's daughter Ann Umlah
- Pierre Cloutier, who gave Aunt Anne a copy of the Bishop family history, and sent me his ex-wife's line back to the keepers of the Bishop Bible - my great grandmother's youngest brother Joseph Richard and his wife Teresa Umlah
- James W.J. Collier lawyer in Bar Harbour Maine, who is descended from John Collier & Agnes Redmond on the Catholic branch of the family, and is the uncle of Chris Tanner of Halifax who has extended and added to our family tree. He too had heard the stories of John Collier's drowning fishing with his son, and Thomas Redmond's drowning while guiding hunters.
- John Cordes - his large family tree contains all that I know about

the Moser family of David Redmond's second wife.

- Noella Fisher - Halifax lawyer who sent me her massive research on the Coolen family of St Margaret's Bay and Shad Bay - this included a wall size scroll of her family tree and a huge computer paper file on all of her collections and observations. She and her cousin Helen Mitchell (Coolen) are descended from Charles Coolen, who occupied half of the huge Coolen double house in Shad Bay, and were the last of the line to live on Coolen Shad Bay land before it was sold as a beach/park.
- Karen Fletcher of Barnardo's who sent me my father's file from the orphanage, and answered all my questions about the buildings where he stayed in London and elsewhere.
- Jan Fralic-Brown - she is an executive on GANS - the genealogy association of Nova Scotia - and sent me her research on the Bishop family, and showed me records taken from the Presbyterian Witness magazine from the 1800s.
- Christene Harvey - Dodd family expert who has traced the Dodds back four centuries to a famous Quaker named Thomas Smallbone, the first Quaker to be persecuted. She was able to trace back so far because of the excellent records of the parish church in Eydon, Northamptonshire.
- Richard Jackson who maintains the Willoughby web-site, including notes from other researchers.
- Peter Lee who maintains the Nuneaton web-site, and told me the story of the building of my grandparents homes to house the workers for the giant new factory in Rugby.
- Ross McKay of Halifax, my third cousin once removed, who had completed the research on the McKay and Redmond families before I even became interested in genealogy. I have found remarkably few additions to the family - his research was very thorough. He lived in Grand River as a child, and his name is all over the censuses and cemetery listings for that area of Cape Breton, as he did most of the transcriptions. Some day I hope to go to Halifax so he can show me the church records and land records he used to create and source his great family trees.
- Anne Owen-Smith of Raleigh NC who is a cousin from the shoemaking branch (Warren/Letts) of my family from Long Buckby, NTH, and wrote her family story for the Long Buckby web-site.
- Eric Palmer - the Willoughby resident who guided me around

Willoughby history on my visit there - he was particularly proud of the local Cricket Club.

- Jill Prime - the expert on Olorenshaws (my grandfather's first wife's family)
- Frank Redmond - the last Redmond to live on the Seabright land of Ann Redmond (Umlah) on Redmond road- just a decade or so ago. He sent me his line descending from my great grandfather's youngest brother Edward, and also pictures of the headstones in the Redmond cemetery, and of the old family house and homestead.
- Iris Shea - the Umlah family expert who first let me know about pioneer David Redmond and the marriages of his son Thomas and daughter Margaret to daughter Ann and son John of John Umlah, and their friendship in the 1700s. Iris also is the genealogist for the Goodwood area just south of Halifax, and she helped me with background on Robert Bishop and my grandfather Howard's childhood home.

Once again - please check out my web-site:

<http://www.tim-ash.com/genealogy/index.php>

or contact me at jimashemail@telus.net- I will be constantly adding to it and improving its sourcing as long as I am able.